



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





2227 f.52







THE  
*HISTORY OF THE REIGN*  
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES V.  
VOL. III.





FRONTISPIECE.

III



The Peace of Cambray, conducted  
between Margaret of Austria &  
Louisa Mother of Francis I.

THE  
HISTORY OF THE REIGN  
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES V.

By WILLIAM ROBERTSON, D.D.

PRINCIPAL OF THE UNIVERSITY OF EDINBURGH,  
HISTORIOGRAPHER TO HIS MAJESTY  
FOR SCOTLAND,  
AND MEMBER OF THE ROYAL ACADEMY OF  
HISTORY AT MADRID.

THE NINTH EDITION.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

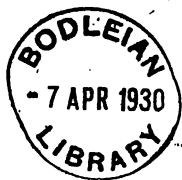
VOL. III.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR T. CADELL JUN. AND W. DAVIES  
(SUCCESSORS TO MR. CADELL) IN THE STRAND;  
AND E. BALFOUR, EDINBURGH.

1798.



THE  
HISTORY OF THE REIGN  
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES V.

---

BOOK V.

THE account of the cruel manner in which the pope had been treated, filled all Europe with astonishment or horror. To see a Christian emperor, who, by possessing that dignity, ought to have been the protector and advocate of the holy see, lay violent hands on him who represented Christ on earth, and detain his sacred person in a rigorous captivity, was considered as an impiety that merited the severest vengeance, and which called for the immediate interposition of every dutiful son of the church. Francis and Henry, alarmed at the progress of the Imperial arms in Italy, had, even before the taking of Rome, entered into a closer alliance; and, in order to give some check to the emperor's ambition, had agreed to make a vigorous diversion in the Low Countries. The force of every motive which had influenced them at that time was now increased; and to these were added the desire of rescuing the pope out of the emperor's hands, a measure no less politic than it appears

VOL. III.



to be pious. This, however, rendered it necessary to abandon their hostile intentions against the Low Countries, and to make Italy the theatre of war, as it was by vigorous operations that they might contribute most effectually towards delivering Rome, and setting Clement at liberty. Francis being now sensible that, in his system with regard to the affairs of Italy, the spirit of refinement had carried him too far; and that by an excess of remissness, he had allowed Charles to attain advantages which he might easily have prevented; was eager to make reparation for his error, of which he was not often guilty, by activity more suitable to his temper. He thought his interposition necessary, in order

ducted it, on the part of his sovereign, with unbounded powers, Francis treated with him in person at Amiens [July 11], where the cardinal appeared, and was received with royal magnificence. A marriage between the duke of Orleans and the princess Mary was agreed to as the basis of the confederacy; it was resolved that Italy should be the theatre of war; the strength of the army which should take the field, as well as the contingent of troops or of money, which each prince should furnish, were settled; and if the emperor did not accept of the proposals which they were jointly to make him, they bound themselves immediately to declare war, and to begin hostilities [Aug. 18]. Henry, who took every resolution with impetuosity, entered so eagerly into this new alliance, that, in order to give Francis the strongest proof of his friendship and respect, he formally renounced the ancient claim of the English monarchs to the crown of France, which had long been the pride and ruin of the nation; as a full compensation for which he accepted a pension of fifty thousand crown, to be paid annually to himself and his successors<sup>a</sup>.

The pope, being unable to fulfil the conditions of his capitulation, still remained a prisoner under the severe custody of Alarcon. The Florentines no sooner heard of what had happened at Rome, than they ran to arms in a tumultuous manner; expelled the cardinal di Cortona, who governed *their city in the pope's name*; defaced the arms *of the Medici*; broke in pieces the statues c

<sup>a</sup> Herbert, 83, &c. Rym. Fœd. xiv. 203.

Leo and Clement ; and declaring themselves a free state, re-established their ancient popular government. The Venetians, taking advantage of the calamity of their ally the pope, seized Ravenna, and other places belonging to the church, under pretext of keeping them in deposit. The dukes of Urbino and Ferrara laid hold likewise on part of the spoils of the unfortunate pontiff, whom they considered as irretrievably ruined.

Lannoy, on the other hand, laboured to derive some solid benefit from that unforeseen event, which gave such splendour and superiority to his master's arms. For this purpose he marched to Rome, together with Moncada, and the marquis del Guasto, at the head of all the troops which they could assemble in the kingdom of Naples. The arrival of this reinforcement brought new calamities on the unhappy citizens of Rome ; for the soldiers envying the wealth of their companions, imitated their licence, and with the utmost rapacity gathered the gleanings, which had escaped the avarice of the Spaniards and Germans. There was not now any army in Italy capable of making head against the imperialists ; and nothing more was requisite to reduce Bologna, and the other towns in the ecclesiastical state, than to have appeared before them. But the soldiers having been so long accustomed, under Bourbon, to an entire relaxation of discipline, and having tasted the sweets of living at discretion in a great city, almost *without the controul* of a superior, were become

so impatient of military subordination, and so averse to service, that they refused to leave Rome, unless all their arrears were paid; a condition which they knew to be impossible. At the same time, they declared, that they would not obey any other person than the prince of Orange, whom the army had chosen general. Lannoy, finding that it was no longer safe for him to remain among licentious troops, who despised his dignity, and hated his person, returned to Naples; soon after the marquis del Guasto and Moncada thought it prudent to quit Rome for the same reason. The prince of Orange, a general only in name, and by the most precarious of all tenures, the good-will of soldiers, whom success and licence had rendered capricious, was obliged to pay more attention to their humours, than they did to his commands. Thus the emperor, instead of reaping any of the advantages which he might have expected from the reduction of Rome, had the mortification to see the most formidable body of troops that he had ever brought into the field, continue in a state of inactivity, from which it was impossible to rouse them<sup>c</sup>.

This gave the king of France and the Venetians leisure to form new schemes, and to enter into new engagements for delivering the pope, and preserving the liberties of Italy. The newly-restored republic of Florence very imprudently joined with them, and Lautrec, of whose abilities the Italians entertained a much more favourable *opinion than his own master*, was, in order

<sup>c</sup> *Guic. l. xviii. 454.*

gratify them, appointed generalissimo of the  
rue. It was with the utmost reluctance he  
lertook that office, being unwilling to expose  
hself a second time to the difficulties and dis-  
lices, which the negligence of the king, or the  
lice of his favourites, might bring upon him.  
e best troops in France marched under his  
nmand; and the king of England, though he  
d not yet declared war against the emperor,  
vanced a considerable sum towards carrying on  
e expedition. Lautrec's first operations were  
ident, vigorous, and successful. By the as-  
sance of Andrew Doria, the ablest sea-officer  
that age, he rendered himself master of Genoa,  
d re-established in that republic the faction of  
e Fregosi, together with the dominion of  
ance. He obliged Alexandria to surrender  
er a short siege, and reduced all the country  
that side of the Tesino. He took Pavia,  
rich had so long resisted the arms of his sove-  
gn, by assault, and plundered it with that  
uelty, which the memory of the fatal disaster  
at had befallen the French nation before its  
ills naturally inspired. All the Milanese,  
nich Antonio de Leyva defended with a  
mall body of troops, kept together, and, sup-  
orted by his own address and industry, must  
ve soon submitted to his power, if he had con-  
ued to bend the force of his arms against that  
untry. But Lautrec durst not complete a  
nquest which would have been so honourable  
himself, and of such advantage to the league.  
*ancis* knew his confederates to be more de-  
*us* of circumscribing the Imperial power in  
e than of extending it.

and was afraid, that if Sforza were once re-established in Milan, they would second but coldly the attack which he intended to make on the kingdom of Naples. For this reason he instructed Lautrec not to push his operations with too much vigour in Lombardy; and happily the importunities of the pope, and the solicitations of the Florentines, the one for relief, and the other for protection, were so urgent as to furnish him with a decent pretext for marching forward, without yielding to the intreaties of the Venetians and Sforza, who insisted on his laying siege to Milan<sup>d</sup>.

While Lautrec advanced slowly towards Rome, the emperor had time to deliberate concerning the disposal of the pope's person, who still remained a prisoner in the castle of St. Angelo. Notwithstanding the specious veil of religion, with which he usually endeavoured to cover his actions, Charles, in many instances, appears to have been but little under the influence of religious considerations, and had frequently, on this occasion, expressed an inclination to transport the pope into Spain, that he might indulge his ambition with the spectacle of the two most illustrious personages in Europe successively prisoners in his court. But the fear of giving new offence to all Christendom, and of filling his own subjects with horror, obliged him to forego that satisfaction<sup>e</sup>. The progress of the confederates made it now necessary, either to set the pope at liberty, or to remove him to some place

<sup>d</sup> Guic. l. xviii. 461. Bellay, 107, &c. Maurec. Hist. Veqet. lib. iii. 238.

<sup>e</sup> Guic. l. xviii. 457.

confinement more secure than the castle of Angelo. Many considerations induced him refer the former, particularly his want of money, requisite as well for recruiting his army, as for paying off the vast arrears due to it. In order to obtain this, he had assembled the Cortes of Castile at Valladolid about the beginning of the year, and having laid before them a statement of his affairs, and represented the necessity of making great preparations to resist the enemies, whom envy at the success which had attended his arms would unite against him, he obtained a large supply in the most pressing crisis [Feb. 11]; but the Cortes, as the nation already exhausted by extraordinary donatives, refused to load it with any new burden, and in spite of all his endeavours to gain or to intimidate its members, persisted in this resolution<sup>f</sup>. No resource, therefore, remained, but the extorting Pope Clement, by way of ransom, a sum sufficient for discharging what was due to his troops, out of which it was vain to mention to them leaving Rome.

But was the pope inactive on his part, or his suggestions unsuccessful towards hastening such a victory. By flattery, and the appearance of unshaken confidence, he disarmed the resentment of Cardinal Colonna, and wrought upon his vanity, which made him desirous of shewing the world, that as his power had at first depressed the pope, it could now raise him to his former dignity.

By favours and promises he gained Morillo, who, by one of those whimsical revolutions

which occur so often in his life, and which so strongly display his character, had now recovered his credit and authority with the Imperialists. The address and influence of two such men easily removed all the obstacles which retarded an accommodation, and brought the treaty for Clement's liberty to a conclusion, upon conditions hard indeed, but not more severe than a prince in his situation had reason to expect. He was obliged to advance, in ready money, an hundred thousand crowns for the use of the army; to pay the same sum at the distance of a fortnight; and at the end of three months, an hundred and fifty thousand more. He engaged not to take part in the war against Charles, either in Lombardy or in Naples; he granted him a bull of cruzado, and the tenth of ecclesiastical revenues in Spain; and he not only gave hostages, but put the emperor in possession of several towns, as a security for the performance of these articles. Having raised the first moiety by a sale of ecclesiastical dignities and benefices, and other expedients equally uncanonical, a day was fixed for delivering him from imprisonment [Dec. 6]. But Clement, impatient to be free, after a tedious confinement of six months, as well as full of the suspicion and distrust natural to the unfortunate, was so much afraid that the Imperialists might still throw in obstacles to put off his deliverance, that he disguised himself, on the night preceding the day when he was to be set free, in the habit of a merchant, and Alarcon having remitted somewhat of his vigilance upon



the conclusion of the treaty, he made his escape undiscovered. He arrived before next morning

Orvietto, without any attendants but a single squire; and from thence wrote a letter of thanks to Lautrec, as the chief instrument of procuring him liberty<sup>h</sup>.

During these transactions, the ambassadors of France and England repaired to Spain, in consequence of the treaty which Wolsey had concluded with the French king. The emperor, unwilling to draw on himself the united forces of the two monarchs, discovered an inclination to relax somewhat the rigour of the treaty of Madrid, to which, hitherto, he had adhered flexibly. He offered to accept of the two millions of crowns, which Francis had proposed to pay as an equivalent for the duchy of Burgundy, and to set his sons at liberty, on condition that he would recall his army out of Italy, and restore Genoa, together with the other conquests which he had made in that country. With regard to Sforza, he insisted that his fate should be determined by the judges appointed to inquire into his crimes. These propositions being made to Henry, he transmitted them to his ally the French king, whom it more nearly concerned to examine and to answer them; and if Francis had been sincerely solicitous, either to conclude peace or preserve consistency in his own conduct, he ought instantly to have closed with overtures which differed but little from the propositions which he himself had formerly made<sup>i</sup>. But

<sup>h</sup> Guic. l. xviii. 467, &c. Jov. Vit. Colon. 169. Hauroc. l. Venet. lib. iii. 252.

<sup>i</sup> Recueil des Tr. de l'Édit. de 1564.

his views were now much changed; his alliance with Henry, Lautrec's progress in Italy, and the superiority of his army there above that of the emperor, hardly left him room to doubt of the success of his enterprise against Naples. Full of those sanguine hopes, he was at no loss to find pretexts for rejecting or evading what the emperor had proposed. Under the appearance of sympathy with Sforza, for whose interests he had not hitherto discovered much solicitude, he again demanded the full and unconditional re-establishment of that unfortunate prince in his dominions. Under colour of its being imprudent to rely on the emperor's sincerity, he insisted that his sons should be set at liberty before the French troops left Italy, or surrendered Genoa. The unreasonableness of these demands, as well as the reproachful insinuation with which they were accompanied, irritated Charles to such a degree, that he could hardly listen to them with patience; and repenting of his moderation, which had made so little impression on his enemies, declared that he would not depart in the smallest article from the conditions which he had now offered. Upon this the French and English ambassadors (for Henry had been drawn unaccountably to concur with Francis in these strange propositions) demanded and obtained their audience of leave \*.

Next day [Jan. 22, 1728.], two heralds, who had accompanied the ambassadors on purpose, though they had hitherto concealed their character, hav-

\* *Rym. xiv. 200. Herbert, 85. Guic. l. xviii. 471.*

ing assumed the ensigns of their office, appeared in the emperor's court, and being admitted into his presence, they, in the name of their respective masters, and with all the solemnity customary on such occasions, denounced war against him. Charles received both with a dignity suitable to his own rank, but spoke to each in a tone adapted to the sentiments which he entertained of their sovereigns. He accepted the defiance of the English monarch with a firmness tempered by some degree of decency and respect. His reply to the French king abounded with that acrimony of expression, which personal rivalry, exasperated by the memory of many injuries inflicted as well as suffered, naturally suggests. He de-

greatest monarchs of their age, were entirely laid aside<sup>1</sup>.

The example of two personage so illustrious drew such general attention, and carried with it so much authority, that it had considerable influence in producing an important change in manners all over Europe. Duels, as has already been observed, had long been permitted by the laws of all the European nations, and forming a part of their jurisprudence, were authorised by the magistrate, on many occasions, as the most proper method of terminating questions with regard to property, or of deciding those which respected crimes. But single combats being considered as solemn appeals to the omniscience and justice of the Supreme Being, they were allowed only in public causes, according to the prescription of law, and carried on in a judicial form. Men accustomed to this manner of decisions in courts of justice, were naturally led to apply it to personal and private quarrels. Duels, which at first could be appointed by the civil judge alone, were fought without the interposition of his authority, and in cases to which the laws did not extend. The transaction between Charles and Francis strongly countenanced this practice. Upon every affront, or injury, which seemed to touch his honour, a gentleman thought himself entitled to draw his sword, and to call on his adversary to give him satisfaction. Such an opinion becoming prevalent among men of fierce courage, of high spirit, and of rude manners,

<sup>1</sup> *Recueil des Traitéz*, 2. *Mém. de Bellay*, 103, &c. *Sandoz. Hist. i.* 837.

offence was often given, and revenge was prompt, produced most fatal consequences. A drop of the best blood in Christendom was shed; many useful lives were sacrificed; and, at some times, war itself hath hardly been more destructive than these private contests of honour. So powerful, however, is the dominion of fashion, neither the terror of penal laws, nor revenges for religion, have been able entirely to suppress a practice unknown among the ancients, not justifiable by any principle of reason; though at the same time it must be admitted, that to this absurd custom, we must ascribe in a great degree the extraordinary gentleness and complaisance of modern manners, and that respectful attention of one man to another, which, formerly, rendered the social intercourses of life more agreeable and decent, than among the uncivilized nations of antiquity.

While the two monarchs seemed so eager to terminate their quarrel by a personal combat, the emperor continued his operations, which proved to be more decisive. His army, which was now increased to thirty-five thousand men, proceeded by great marches towards Naples [Feb.].

The terror of their approach, as well as the representations and the entreaties of the prince of Salerno, prevailed at last on the Imperial troops, though with difficulty, to quit Rome, of which they had kept possession during ten months. Of that flourishing army which had entered the city, scarcely one half remained; the rest, destroyed by the plague, or wasted by diseases, the consequence of their inactivity, intemperance, and de-

bauchery, fell victims to their own crime. Lautrec made the greatest efforts to attack in their retreat towards the Neapolitan territory which would have finished the war at once. But the prudence of their leaders disappointed all his measures, and conducted them with loss to Naples. The people of that kingdom extremely impatient to shake off the Spanish yoke, received the French with open arms wherever they appeared to take possession. Gaeta and Naples excepted, hardly any place of importance remained in the hands of the imperialists. The preservation of the former owing to the strength of its fortifications, of the latter to the presence of the Imperial army. Lautrec, however, sat down before Naples; but finding it vain to think of reducing the city by force while defended by a whole army, he was obliged to employ the slower, but more dangerous method of blockade; and he taken measures which appeared to him effective. He confidently assured his master, that he would soon compel the besieged to capitulate. These hopes were strongly confirmed by the success of a vigorous attempt made by the emperor in order to recover the command of the sea. The gallies of Andrew Doria, under the command of his nephew Philippino, guarded the mouth of the harbour. Moncada, who succeeded Lannoy in the viceroyalty, rigged a number of gallies superior to Doria's, manning them with a chosen body of Spanish veterans, and going on board himself, together with the

quis del Gualto, attacked Philippino before arrival of the Venetian and French fleets. The Genoese admiral, by his superior skill in naval operations, easily triumphed over the valour and number of the Spaniards. The viceroy was killed, most of his fleet destroyed, and Gual with many officers of distinction, being taken prisoners, were put on board the captive galleys and sent by Philippino as trophies of his victory to his uncle.

Notwithstanding this flattering prospect of success, many circumstances concurred to frustrate Lautrec's expectations. Clement, though he always acknowledged his being indebted to Francis for the recovery of his liberty, and oft

arms, were intent only upon recovering such maritime towns in the Neapolitan dominions as were to be possessed by their republic, while they were altogether careless about the reduction of Naples, on which the success of the common cause depended<sup>o</sup>. The king of England, instead of being able, as had been projected, to embarrass the emperor by attacking his territories in the Low Countries, found his subjects so averse to an unnecessary war, which would have ruined the trade of the nation, that in order to silence their clamours and put a stop to the insurrections ready to break out among them, he was compelled to conclude a truce for eight months with the governors of the Netherlands<sup>p</sup>. Francis himself, with the same unpardonable inattention of which he had formerly been guilty, and for which he had suffered so severely, neglected to make proper remittances to Lautrec for the support of his army<sup>q</sup>.

These unexpected events retarded the progress of the French, discouraging both the general and his troops; but the revolt of Andrew Doria proved a fatal blow to all their measures. That gallant officer, the citizen of a republic, and trained up from his infancy in the sea service, retained the spirit of independence natural to the former, together with the plain liberal manners peculiar to the latter. A stranger to the arts of submission or flattery necessary in courts, but conscious at the same time of his own merit and importance, he always offered his advice

<sup>o</sup> *Guic. l. xix. 491.*

<sup>p</sup> *Herbert, 90. Rymer, 14. 258.*

<sup>q</sup> *Guic. l. xviii. 478.*



with freedom, and often preferred his complaints and remonstrances with boldness. The French ministers, unaccustomed to such liberties, determined to ruin a man who treated them with so little deference; and though Francis himself had just sense of Doria's services, as well as an high esteem for his character, the courtiers, by continually representing him as a man haughty, intractable, and more solicitous to aggrandize himself, than to promote the interest of France, gradually undermined the foundations of his credit, and filled the king's mind with suspicion and distrust. From thence proceeded several affronts and indignities put upon Doria. His appointments were not regularly paid; his advice, even in naval affairs, was often slighted; an attempt was made to seize the prisoners taken by his nephew in the sea-fight off Naples; all which he bore with abundance of ill humour. But an injury offered to his country transported him beyond all bounds of patience. The French began to fortify Savona, to clear its harbour, and removing thither some branches of trade carried on at Genoa, plainly shewed that they intended to render that town, which had been long the object of jealousy and hatred to the Genoese, their rival in wealth and commerce. Doria, animated with a patriotic zeal for the honour and interest of his country, remonstrated against this in the highest tone, not without threats, if the measure were not instantly abandoned. This bold action, aggravated by the malice of the courtiers, and placed in the most odious light, irritated Francis to such a degree, that he commanded Barbesieux, whom he appointed admiral of the Levant, to

sail directly to Genoa with the French fleet, to arrest Doria, and to seize his galleys. This rash order, the execution of which could have been secured only by the most profound secrecy, was concealed with so little care, that Doria got timely intelligence of it, and retired with all his galleys to a place of safety. Gualto, his prisoner, who had long observed and fomented his growing discontent, and had often allured him by magnificent promises to enter into the emperor's service, laid hold on this favourable opportunity. While his indignation and resentment were at their height, he prevailed on him to dispatch one of his officers to the Imperial court with his overtures and demands. The negotiation was not long; Charles, fully sensible of the importance of such an acquisition, granted him whatever terms he required. Doria sent back his commission, together with the collar of St. Michael, to Francis, and hoisting the Imperial colours, sailed with all his galleys towards Naples, not to block up the harbour of that unhappy city, as he had formerly engaged, but to bring them protection and deliverance.

His arrival opened the communication with the sea, and restored plenty in Naples, which was now reduced to the last extremity; and the French having lost their superiority at sea, were soon reduced to great straits for want of provisions. The prince of Orange, who succeeded the viceroy in the command of the Imperial army, shewed himself by his prudent conduct *worthy of that honour which his good fortune and the death of his generals had twice acquired him.* Beloved by the troops, who rememberin

prosperity which they had enjoyed under his command, served him with the utmost alacrity, let slip no opportunity of harassing the enemy, and by continual alarms or sallies fatigued and weakened them<sup>r</sup>. As an addition to all these misfortunes, the diseases common in that country during the sultry months, began to break out among the French troops. The prisoners communicated to them the pestilence which the Imperial army had brought to Naples from Rome, and it raged with such violence, that few, either officers or soldiers, escaped the infection. Of the whole army, not four thousand men, a number hardly sufficient to defend the camp, were capable of doing duty<sup>s</sup>; and being now begged in their turn, they suffered all the miseries from which the Imperialists were delivered. Autrec, after struggling long with so many disappointments and calamities, which preyed on his mind at the same time that the pestilence fasted his body, died [August 15], lamenting the negligence of his sovereign, and the infidelity of his allies, to which so many brave men had fallen victims<sup>t</sup>. By his death, and the indisposition of the other generals, the command devolved on the marquis de Saluces, an officer altogether unequal to such a trust. He, with troops not so dispirited than reduced, retreated in disorder to Averfa; which town being invested by the prince of Orange, Saluces was under the necessity of consenting, that he himself should remain

<sup>r</sup> *Jovii Hist. lib. xxxvi. p. 31, &c.* Sigonii *Vita Doriae,*

*139. Bellay, 114, &c.*

<sup>s</sup> *Bellay, 117, &c.*

*P. Heuter. Rerum Austr. lib. x. c. 2. 231.*

a prisoner of war, that his troops should lay down their arms and colours, give up their baggage, and march under a guard to the frontiers of France. By this ignominious capitulation, the wretched remains of the French army were saved; and the emperor, by his own perseverance and the good conduct of his generals, acquired once more the superiority in Italy<sup>a</sup>.

The loss of Genoa followed immediately upon the ruin of the army in Naples. To deliver his country from the dominion of foreigners was Doria's highest ambition, and had been his principal inducement to quit the service of France, and enter into that of the emperor. A most favourable opportunity for executing this honourable enterprise now presented itself. The city of Genoa, afflicted by the pestilence, was almost deserted by its inhabitants; the French garrison, being neither regularly paid nor recruited, was reduced to an inconsiderable number; Doria's emissaries found that such of the citizens as remained, being weary alike of the French and Imperial yoke, the rigour of which they had alternately felt, were ready to welcome him as their deliverer, and to second all his measures. Things wearing this promising aspect, he sailed towards the coast of Genoa; on his approach the French gallies retired; a small body of men which he landed surprised one of the gates of Genoa in the night-time; Trivulci, the French governor, with his feeble garrison, shut himself up in the citadel, and Doria took possession of the town without bloodshed or resistance [Sep-

<sup>a</sup> Bellay, 117, &c. Jovii Hist. lib. xxv, xxvi.

ember 12]. Want of provisions quickly obliged Livulci to capitulate; the people, eager to polish such an odious monument of their servitude, ran together with a tumultuous violence, and levelled the citadel with the ground.

It was now in Doria's power to have rendered himself the sovereign of his country, which he had so happily delivered from oppression. The remembrance of his former actions, the success of his present attempt, the attachment of his friends, the gratitude of his countrymen, together with the support of the emperor, all conspired to facilitate his attaining the supreme authority, and invited him to lay hold of it. But with a magnanimity of which there are few examples, he sacrificed all thoughts of aggrandizing himself to the virtuous satisfaction of establishing liberty in his country, the highest object at which ambition can aim. Having assembled the whole body of the people in the court before his palace, he assured them, that the happiness of seeing them once more in possession of freedom was to him a full reward for all his services; that, more delighted with the name of citizen than of sovereign, he claimed no pre-eminence or power above his equals; but remitted entirely to them the right of settling what form of government they would now chuse to be established among them. The people listened to him with tears of admiration and of joy. Twelve persons were selected to new-model the constitution of the republic. The influence of Doria's virtue and example communicated itself to his countrymen; the factions which had long torn and ruined the

tions were taken to prevent their reviving ; and the form of government which has subsisted with little variation since that time in Genoa was established with universal applause. Doria lived to a great age, beloved, respected, and honoured by his countrymen ; and adhering uniformly to his professions of moderation, without arrogating any thing unbecoming a private citizen, he preserved a great ascendant over the councils of the republic, which owed its being to his generosity. The authority which he possessed was more flattering, as well as more satisfactory, than that derived from sovereignty ; a dominion founded in love and in gratitude ; and upheld by veneration for his virtues, not by the dread of his power. His memory is still revered by the Genoese, and he is distinguished in their public monuments, and celebrated in the works of their historians, by the most honourable of all appellations, THE FATHER OF HIS COUNTRY, AND THE RESTORER OF ITS LIBERTY \*.

1529.] Francis, in order to recover the reputation of his arms, discredited by so many losses, made new efforts in the Milanese. But the count of St. Pol, a rash and unexperienced officer, to whom he gave the command, was no match for Antonio de Leyva, the ablest of the Imperial generals. He, by his superior skill in war, checked, with a handful of men, the brisk, but ill-concerted motions of the French ; and though so inferior himself that he was carried constantly in a litter, he surpassed them, when occasion re-

\* *Guic. l. xix. p. 498.* Sigonii *Vita Doriæ*, p. 1146.  
*Jovii Hist. lib. xxvi. p. 36, &c.*

less in activity than in prudence, expected march he surprised, defeated, prisoner the count of St. Pol, ruining his army in the Milanese as entirely as the force of Orange had ruined that which besieged Naples.

After these vigorous operations in the field, the army discovered an impatient desire of peace, and continual negotiations were carried on for that purpose. The French king, discouraged and almost exhausted, by so many unsuccessful enterprises, was reduced now to think of procuring the release of his sons by concessions, and by the terror of his arms. The pope hoped to recover by a treaty whatever he had lost in the war.

The emperor, notwithstanding the advantages which he had gained, had many reasons to make him wish for an accommodation. Solyman, having over-run Hungary, was ready to march in upon the Austrian territories with the whole force of the East. The reformation gaining ground daily in Germany, the princes who were secured it had entered into a confederacy which the emperor thought dangerous to the tranquillity of the empire. The Spaniards murmured at a war of such unusual length, the weight of which fell chiefly on them. The variety and extent of the emperor's operations far exceeded what his resources could support; his success hitherto had been owing chiefly to his own good fortune and the abilities of his generals, nor could he flatter himself that they, with troops destitute of ever

necessary, would always triumph over en-  
 ill in a condition to renew their attacks.  
 ties, however, were at equal pains to con-  
 to dissemble their real sentiments. The  
 r, that his inability to carry on the war  
 not be suspected, insisted on high terms  
 one of a conqueror. The pope, solicitous  
 lose his present allies before he came to  
 cement with Charles, continued to make  
 and protestations of fidelity to the former,  
 he privately negotiated with the latter.  
 , afraid that his confederates might pre-  
 n by treating for themselves with the em-  
 had recourse to many dishonourable arti-  
 in order to turn their attention from the  
 s which he was taking to adjust all dif-  
 with his rival.

his situation of affairs, when all the con-  
 powers wished for peace, but durst not  
 too hastily on the steps necessary for at-  
 it, two ladies undertook to procure this  
 so much desired by all Europe [May].  
 were Margaret of Austria, duchess-dow-  
 Savoy, the emperor's aunt, and Louise,  
 's mother. They agreed on an inter-  
 Cambray, and being lodged in two ad-  
 houses, between which a communication  
 ened, met together without ceremony or  
 tion, and held daily conferences, to which  
 ion whatever was admitted. As both  
 profoundly skilled in business, thoroughly  
*ted with the secrets of their respective*  
*and possessed with perfect confidence in*  
*er, they soon made great progress to*  
*ual accommodation ; and the ambass*



of all the confederates waited in anxious suspense to know their fate, the determination which was entirely in the hands of those illustrious negotiators\*.

At whatever diligence they used to hasten towards a general peace, the pope had the address and industry to get the start of his allies, by concluding at Barcelona a particular treaty for himself [June 20]. The emperor, impatient to visit in his way to Germany, and desirous of establishing tranquillity in the one country, while he attempted to compose the disorders which abounded in the other, found it necessary to procure at least one alliance among the Italian states, on which he might depend. That with France, who courted it with unwearied importunity, seemed more proper than any other. Charles being extremely solicitous to make some atonement for the insults which he had offered to the sacred character of the pope, and to expiate past offences by new merit, granted Clement, notwithstanding all his misfortunes, terms more favourable than he could have expected. A continued series of successes. Among other things, he engaged to restore all the territories belonging to the ecclesiastical state; to re-establish the dominion of the Medici in Florence; to give his natural daughter in marriage to Alexander, the head of that family; and to put it in the pope's power to decide concerning the fate of the Milanese, and the possession of the Milanese. In return for these ample concessions, Clement gave the emperor the investiture of Naples with-

out the reserve of any tribute, but the present of a white steed, in acknowledgment of his sovereignty; absolved all who had been concerned in assaulting and plundering Rome, and permitted Charles and his brother Ferdinand to levy the fourth of the ecclesiastical revenues throughout their dominions <sup>a</sup>.

The account of this transaction quickened the negotiations at Cambray, and brought Margaret and Louise to an immediate agreement [Aug. 5]. The treaty of Madrid served as the basis of that which they concluded; the latter being intended to mitigate the rigour of the former. The chief articles were, That the emperor should not, for the present, demand the restitution of Burgundy, reserving, however, in full force, his rights and pretensions to that dutchy; That Francis should pay two millions of crowns as the ransom of his sons, and, before they were set at liberty, should restore such towns as he still held in the Milanese; That he should resign his pretensions to the sovereignty of Flanders and of Artois; That he should renounce all his pretensions to Naples, Milan, Genoa, and every other place beyond the Alps; That he should immediately consummate the marriage concluded between him and the emperor's sister Eleonora <sup>b</sup>.

Thus Francis, chiefly from his impatience to procure liberty to his sons, sacrificed every thing which had at first prompted him to take arms, or which had induced him, by continuing hostilities during nine successive campaigns, to pro-

<sup>a</sup> *Guic. l. xix. 522.* <sup>b</sup> *P. Heuter Rer. Austr. lib. x. c. 3. p. 234. Sandov. Hist. dell Emper. Car. V. ii. 28.*

tract the war to a length hardly known in Europe before the establishment of standing armies, and the imposition of exorbitant taxes, became universal. The emperor, by this treaty, was rendered sole arbiter of the fate of Italy; he delivered his territories in the Netherlands from an unpleasant badge of subjection; and after having baffled his rival in the field, he prescribed to him the conditions of peace. The different conduct and spirit with which the two monarchs carried on the operations of war, led naturally to such an issue of it. Charles, inclined by temper, as well as obliged by his situation, concerted all his schemes with caution, pursued them with perseverance, and observing circumstances and events with attention, let none escape that could be improved to advantage. Francis, more enterprising than steady, undertook great designs with warmth, but often executed them with remissness; and diverted by his pleasures, or deceived by his favourites, he lost on several occasions the most promising opportunities of success. Nor had the character of the two rivals themselves greater influence on the operations of war, than the opposite qualities of the generals whom they employed. Among the Imperialists, valour tempered with prudence; fertility of invention aided by experience; discernment to penetrate the designs of their enemies; a provident sagacity in conducting their own measures; in a word, all the talents, which form great commanders and ensure victory, were conspicuous. *Among the French, these qualities were either wanting, or the very reverse of them abounded;*

remained for the emperor but to take some vigorous measures towards asserting the doctrines and authority of the established church. These, Campeggio, the papal nuncio, had always recommended as the only proper and effectual course of dealing with such obstinate heretics. In compliance with his opinions and remonstrances, the diet issued a decree [Nov. 19], condemning most of the peculiar tenets held by the protestants; forbidding any person to protect or tolerate such as taught them; enjoining a strict observance of the established rites; and prohibiting any further innovation under severe penalties. All orders of men were required to assist with their persons and fortunes in carrying this decree into execution; and such as refused to obey it were declared incapable of acting as judges, or of appearing as parties in the Imperial chamber, the supreme court of judicature in the empire. To all which was subjoined a promise, that an application should be made to the pope, requiring him to call a general council within six months, in order to terminate all controversies by its sovereign decisions.

The severity of this decree, which was considered as a prelude to the most violent persecution, alarmed the protestants, and convinced them that the emperor was resolved on their destruction. The dread of those calamities which were ready to fall on the church, oppressed the feeble spirit of Melancthon; and, as if the cause had already been desperate, he gave himself up to melancholy and lamentation. But Luth

who during the meeting of the diet had endeavoured to confirm and animate his party by several treatises which he addressed to them, was not disconcerted or dismayed at the prospect of this new danger. He comforted Melancthon, and his other desponding disciples, and exhorted the princes not to abandon those truths which they had lately asserted with such laudable boldness<sup>a</sup>. His exhortations made the deeper impression upon them, as they were greatly alarmed at that time by the account of a combination among the popish princes of the empire for the maintenance of the established religion, to which Charles himself had acceded<sup>b</sup>. This convinced them that it was necessary to stand on their guard; and that their own safety, as well as the success of their cause, depended on union. Filled with this dread of the adverse party, and with these sentiments concerning the conduct proper for themselves, they assembled at Smalkalde. There they concluded a league of mutual defence against all aggressors<sup>c</sup> [Dec. 22], by which they formed the protestant states of the empire into one regular body; and beginning already to consider themselves as such, they resolved to apply to the kings of France and England, and to implore them to patronize and assist their new confederacy.

An affair not connected with religion furnished them with a pretence for courting the aid of foreign princes. Charles, whose ambitious views enlarged in proportion to the increase of his

<sup>a</sup> *Seck. ii. 180.* Sleid. 140.

*iii. 11.*

<sup>b</sup> Sleid. Hist. 142.

<sup>c</sup> *Seck. ii. 200.*

and encouraged his hopes, that he might widen the breach between him and the emperor, Catharine's nephew, and, what was more forcible perhaps in its operation than all these united, the king had conceived a violent love for the celebrated Ann Boleyn, a young lady of great beauty, and of greater accomplishments, whom, as he found it impossible to gain her on other terms, he determined to raise to the throne. The papal authority had often been interposed to grant divorces for reasons less specious than those which Henry produced. When the matter was first proposed to Clement, during his imprisonment in the castle of St. Angelo, as his hopes of recovering liberty depended entirely on the king of England, and his ally of France, he expressed the warmest inclination to gratify him. But no-sooner was he set free, than he discovered other sentiments. Charles, who espoused the protection of his aunt with zeal inflamed by resentment, alarmed the pope on the one hand with threats, which made a deep impression on his timid mind; and allured him on the other with those promises in favour of his family, which he afterwards accomplished. Upon the prospect of these, Clement not only forgot all his obligations to Henry, but ventured to endanger the interest of the Romish religion in England, and to run the risque of alienating that kingdom for ever from the obedience of the papal see. After amusing Henry during two years, with all the subtleties and chicanes which the court of Rome can so dexterously employ to protract or defeat any cause; after displaying the whole extent of his ambiguous and deceitful policy

policy, the intricacies of which the English historians, to whom it properly belongs, have found it no easy matter to trace and unravel; he, at last, recalled the powers of the delegates, whom he had appointed to judge in the point; avocated the cause to Rome, leaving the king no other hope of obtaining a divorce, but from the personal decision of the pope himself. As Clement was now in strict alliance with the emperor, who had purchased his friendship by the exorbitant concessions which have been mentioned, Henry despaired of procuring any sentence from the former but what was dictated by the latter. His honour, however, and passions concurred in preventing him from relinquishing his scheme of a divorce, which he determined to accomplish by other means, and at any rate; and the continuance of Francis's friendship being necessary to counterbalance the emperor's power, he, in order to secure that, not only offered no remonstrances against the total neglect of their allies, in the treaty of Cambray, but made Francis the present of a large sum, as a brotherly contribution towards the payment of the ransom for his sons<sup>d</sup>.

Soon after the treaty of peace was concluded, the emperor landed in Italy with a numerous train of the Spanish nobility, and a considerable body of troops [Aug. 12]. He left the government of Spain, during his absence, to the empress Isabella. By his long residence in that country, he had acquired such thorough knowledge of the character of the people, that he

<sup>d</sup> Herbert. Mem. de Bellay, p. 122.

Ferdinand king of the Romans; who a few days after was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle \*.

When the protestants, who were assembled a second time at Smalkalde, received an account of this transaction, and heard, at the same time, that prosecutions were commenced, in the Imperial chamber, against some of their number, on account of their religious principles, they thought it necessary, not only to renew their former confederacy, but immediately to dispatch their ambassadors into France and England [Feb. 29]. Francis had observed, with all the jealousy of a rival, the reputation which the emperor had acquired by his seeming disinterestedness and moderation in settling the affairs of Italy; and beheld with great concern the successful step which he had taken towards perpetuating and extending his authority in Germany by the election of a king of the Romans. Nothing, however, would have been more impolitic than to precipitate his kingdom into a new war when exhausted by extraordinary efforts, and discouraged by ill success, before it had got time to recruit its strength, or to forget past misfortunes. As no provocation had been given by the emperor, and hardly a pretext for a rupture had been afforded him, he could not violate a treaty of peace which he himself had so lately solicited, without forfeiting the esteem of all Europe, and being detested as a prince void of probity and honour. He observed, with great joy, powerful factions beginning to form in the empire; he listened with the utmost

\* *Steid. 142. Seck. iii. 1. P. Heuter. Rer. Austr. Lib. x. c. 6. p. 240.*



the church ; and while at the head of twenty thousand veteran foldiers, able to give law to all Italy, he kneeled down to kiss the feet of that very pope whom he had so lately detained a prisoner. The Italians, after suffering so much from the ferocity and licentiousness of his armies, and after having been long accustomed to form in their imagination a picture of Charles, which bore some resemblance to that of the barbarous monarchs of the Goths or Huns, who had formerly afflicted their country with like calamities, were surpris'd to see a prince of a graceful appearance, affable and courteous in his deportment, of regular manners, and of exemplary attention to all the offices of religion <sup>f</sup>. They were still more astonish'd when he settled all the concerns of the princes and states which now depended on him, with a degree of moderation and equity much beyond what they had expected.

Charles himself, when he set out from Spain, far from intending to give any such extraordinary proof of his self-denial, seems to have been resolv'd to avail himself to the utmost of the superiority which he had acquired in Italy. But various circumstances concurred in pointing out the necessity of pursuing a very different course. The progress of the Turkish sultan, who, after over-running Hungary, had penetrated into Austria [Sept. 13], and laid siege to Vienna with an army of an hundred and fifty thousand men, loudly called upon him to collect his whole force to oppose that torrent ; and though the *valour of the Germans*, the prudent conduct of

<sup>f</sup> *Sandov. Hist. del Emp. Carl. V. ii. 50. 53. &c.*  
Ferdinand,

Ferdinand, together with the treachery of the vizier, soon obliged Solyman to abandon that enterprize with disgrace and loss [Oct. 16], the religious disorders still growing in Germany rendered the presence of the emperor highly necessary there: the Florentines, instead of giving their consent to the re-establishment of the Medici, which, by the treaty of Barcelona, the emperor had bound himself to procure, were preparing to defend their liberty by force of arms; the preparations for his journey had involved him in unusual expences; and on this, as well as many other occasions, the multiplicity of his affairs, together with the narrowness of his revenues, obliged him to contract the schemes which his boundless ambition was apt to form, and to forego present and certain advantages, that he might guard against more remote but unavoidable dangers. Charles, from all these considerations, finding it necessary to assume an air of moderation, acted his part with a good grace. He admitted Sforza into his presence, and not only gave him a full pardon of all past offences, but granted him the investiture of the dutchy, together with his niece the king of Denmark's daughter in marriage. He allowed the duke of Ferrara to keep possession of all his dominions, adjusting the points in dispute between him and the pope with an impartiality not very agreeable to the latter. He came to a final accommodation with the Venetians, upon the reasonable condition of their restoring whatever they had usurped *during the late war, either in the Neapolitan or*

papal territories. In return for so many concessions, he exacted considerable sums from each of the powers with whom he treated, which they paid without reluctance, and which afforded him the means of proceeding on his journey towards Germany with a magnificence suitable to his dignity <sup>h</sup>.

1530.] These treaties, which restored tranquillity to Italy after a tedious war, the calamities of which had chiefly affected that country, were published at Bologna with great solemnity on the first day of the year one thousand five hundred and thirty; amidst the universal acclamations of the people, applauding the emperor, to whose moderation and generosity they ascribed the blessings of peace which they had so long desired. The Florentines alone did not partake of this general joy. Animated with a zeal for liberty more laudable than prudent, they determined to oppose the restoration of the Medici. The Imperial army had already entered their territories, and formed the siege of their capital. But though deserted by all their allies, and left without any hope of succour, they defended themselves many months with an obstinate valour worthy of better success; and even when they surrendered, they obtained a capitulation which gave them hopes of securing some remains of their liberty. But the emperor, from his desire to gratify the pope, frustrated all their expectations, and abolished their ancient form of government, raised Alexander di Medici to the same absolute dominion over that state, which his

family have retained to the present times. Philibert de Chalons, prince of Orange, the Imperial general, was killed during this siege. His estate and titles descended to his sister Claude de Chalons, who was married to René, count of Nassau, and she transmitted to her posterity of the house of Nassau the title of princes of Orange, which, by their superior talents and valour, they have rendered so illustrious<sup>1</sup>.

After the publication of the peace at Bologna, and the ceremony of his coronation as king of Lombardy and emperor of the Romans [Feb. 22 and 24], which the pope performed with the accustomed formalities, nothing detained Charles in Italy<sup>2</sup>; and he began to prepare for his journey to Germany. His presence became every day more necessary in that country, and was solicited with equal importunity by the catholics and by the favourers of the new doctrines. During that long interval of tranquillity, which the absence of the emperor, the contests between him and the pope, and his attention to the war with France, afforded them, the latter had gained much ground. Most of the princes who had embraced Luther's opinions, had not only established in their territories that form of worship which he approved, but had entirely suppressed the rites of the Romish church. Many of the free cities had imitated their conduct. Almost one half the Germanic body had revolted from the papal see, and its authority, even in those

<sup>1</sup> Guic. l. xx. p. 341, &c. P. Heuter. Rer. Austr. lib. ii. c. 4. p. 236. <sup>2</sup> H. Cornel. Agrippa de duplici coronatione Car. V. ap. Scard. ii. 266.

provinces which had not hitherto shaken off the yoke, was considerably weakened, partly by the example of revolt in the neighbouring states, partly by the secret progress of the reformed doctrine even in those countries where it was not openly embraced. Whatever satisfaction the emperor, while he was at open enmity with the see of Rome, might have felt in those events which tended to mortify and embarrass the pope, he could not help perceiving now, that the religious divisions in Germany would, in the end, prove extremely hurtful to the Imperial authority. The weakness of former emperors had suffered the great vassals of the empire to make such successful encroachments upon their power and prerogative, that during the whole course of a war, which had often required the exertion of his utmost strength, Charles hardly drew any effectual aid from Germany, and found that magnificent titles or obsolete pretensions were almost the only advantages which he had gained by swaying the Imperial sceptre. He became fully sensible, that if he did not recover in some degree the prerogatives which his predecessors had lost, and acquire the authority, as well as possess the name, of head of the empire, his high dignity would contribute more to obstruct than to promote his ambitious schemes. Nothing, he saw, was more essential towards attaining this, than to suppress opinions which might form new bonds of confederacy among the princes of the empire, and unite them by ties stronger and more sacred than any political connection. Nothing seemed to lead more *certainly to the accomplishment of his design, than*

to employ zeal for the established religion, of which he was the natural protector, as the instrument of extending his civil authority.

Accordingly, a prospect no sooner opened of coming to an accommodation with the pope, than, by the emperor's appointment, a diet of the empire was held at Spire [March 15, 1529], in order to take into consideration the state of religion. The decree of the diet assembled there in the year one thousand five hundred and twenty-six, which was almost equivalent to a toleration of Luther's opinions, had given great offence to the rest of Christendom. The greatest delicacy of address, however, was requisite in proceeding to any decision more rigorous. The minds of men, kept in perpetual agitation by a controversy carried on, during twelve years, without intermission of debate, or abatement of zeal, were now inflamed to an high degree. They were accustomed to innovations, and saw the boldest of them successful. Having not only abolished old rites, but substituted new forms in their place, they were influenced as much by attachment to the system which they had embraced, as by aversion to that which they had abandoned. Luther himself, of a spirit not to be worn out by the length and obstinacy of the combat, or to become remiss upon success, continued the attack with as much vigour as he had begun it. His disciples, of whom many equalled him in zeal, and some surpassed him in learning, were no less capable than their master to conduct the controversy in the properest manner. *Many of the laity, some even of the princes, trained up amidst these incessant disputations*

and in the habit of listening to the arguments of the contending parties, who alternately appealed to them as judges, came to be profoundly skilled in all the questions which were agitated, and, upon occasion, could shew themselves not inexperienced in any of the arts with which these theological encounters were managed. It was obvious from all these circumstances, that any violent decision of the diet must have immediately precipitated matters into confusion, and have kindled in Germany the flames of a religious war. All, therefore, that the archduke, and the other commissioners appointed by the emperor, demanded of the diet, was, to enjoin those states of the empire which had hitherto obeyed the decree issued against Luther at Worms, in the year one thousand five hundred and twenty-four, to persevere in the observation of it, and to prohibit the other states from attempting any farther innovation in religion, particularly from abolishing the mass, before the meeting of a general council. After much dispute, a decree to that effect was approved of by a majority of voices<sup>l</sup>.

The elector of Saxony, the marquis of Brandenburg, the landgrave of Hesse, the dukes of Lunenburgh, the prince of Anhalt, together with the deputies of fourteen Imperial or free cities<sup>m</sup>, entered a solemn protest against this decree, as unjust and impious [April 19]. On

<sup>l</sup> Sleid. Hist. 117.

<sup>m</sup> The fourteen cities were Strasburgh, Nuremburgh, Ulm, Constance, Reutlingen, Windsheim, Meinengen, Lindaw, Kempten, Hailbron, Isna, Weissemburgh, Nordlingen,

that account they were distinguished by the name of PROTESTANTS<sup>a</sup>, an appellation which hath since become better known, and more honourable, by its being applied indiscriminately to all the sects, of whatever denomination, which have revolted from the Roman see. Not satisfied with this declaration of their dissent from the decree of the diet, the protestants sent ambassadors into Italy, to lay their grievances before the emperor, from whom they met with the most discouraging reception. Charles was at that time in close union with the pope, and solicitous to attach him inviolably to his interest. During their long residence at Bologna, they held many consultations concerning the most effectual means of extirpating the heresies which had sprung up in Germany. Clement, whose cautious and timid mind the proposal of a general council filled with horror, even beyond what popes, the constant enemies of such assemblies, usually feel, employed every argument to dissuade the emperor from consenting to that measure. He represented general councils as factious, ungovernable, presumptuous, formidable to civil authority, and too slow in their operations to remedy disorders which required an immediate cure. Experience, he said, had now taught both the emperor and himself, that forbearance and lenity, instead of soothing the spirit of innovation, had rendered it more enterprising and presumptuous; it was necessary, therefore, to have recourse to the rigorous methods which such a desperate case required; *Leo's sentence of excommunication, together with the decree of the diet at*

<sup>a</sup> *Steid. Hist.* 119. *F. Paul. Hist.* p. 45. *Sæckend.* ii. 127



Worms, should be carried into execution, and it was incumbent on the emperor to employ his whole power, in order to overawe those, on whom the reverence due either to ecclesiastical or civil authority had no longer any influence. Charles, whose views were very different from the pope's, and who became daily more sensible how obstinate and deep-rooted the evil was, thought of reconciling the protestants by means less violent, and considered the convocation of a council as no improper expedient for that purpose; but promised, if gentler arts failed of success, that then he would exert himself with rigour to reduce to the obedience of the holy see those stubborn enemies of the catholic faith °.

Such were the sentiments with which the emperor set out for Germany, having already appointed a diet of the empire to be held at Augsburg [March 22, 1530]. In his journey towards that city, he had many opportunities of observing the disposition of the Germans with regard to the points in controversy, and found their minds every where so much irritated and inflamed, as convinced him, that nothing tending to severity or rigour ought to be attempted, until all other measures proved ineffectual. He made his public entry into Augsburg with extraordinary pomp [June 15], and found there such a full assembly of the members of the diet, as was suitable both to the importance of the affairs which were to come under their consideration, and to the honour

° *F. Paul.* xlviii. Seck. 1. ii. 142. *Hist. de Confess. d'Auxbourg*, par D. Chytreus, 4to. Antw. 1572. p. 6.

of an emperor, who, after a long absence, returned to them crowned with reputation and success. His presence seems to have communicated to all parties an unusual spirit of moderation and desire of peace. The elector of Saxony would not permit Luther to accompany him to the diet, lest he should offend the emperor by bringing into his presence a person excommunicated by the pope, and who had been the author of all those dissensions which it now appeared so difficult to compose. At the emperor's desire, all the protestant princes forbade the divines who accompanied them to preach in public during their residence at Augsburg. For the same reason they employed Melancthon, the man of the greatest learning, as well as of the most pacific and gentle spirit among the reformers, to draw up a confession of their faith, expressed in terms as little offensive to the Roman catholics, as a regard for truth would permit. Melancthon, who seldom suffered the rancour of controversy to envenom his style, even in writings purely polemical, executed a task so agreeable to his natural disposition with great moderation and address. The creed which he composed, known by the name of the *Confession of Augsburg*, from the place where it was presented, was read publicly in the diet. Some popish divines were appointed to examine it; they brought in their animadversions; a dispute ensued between them and Melancthon, seconded by some of his brethren; but though Melancthon softened some articles, *made concessions with regard to others*, and put *the least exceptionable sense upon all*; though *the emperor himself laboured with great earnest*

Ritute Catharine in her place. But the Ambassador producing unexpectedly full powers to conclude the marriage treaty with the Duke of Orleans, this expedient had no effect. Francis was so highly pleased with an alliance which added such lustre and dignity to the name of Medici, that he offered to grant Catharine an investiture of considerable territories in Italy as a dowry or portion; he seemed ready to forsake Francis in prosecuting his antient claims in Italy, and consented to a personal interview with that monarch &c.

Charles was at the utmost pains to prevent the meeting, in which nothing was likely to be gained but what would be of detriment to him. He could he bear, after he had twice condescended to visit the pope in his own territories, Clement should bestow such a mark of distinction on his rival, as to venture on a voyage by sea in an unfavourable season, in order to pay court to Francis in the French dominions. But the eagerness to accomplish the match overcame the scruples of pride, or fear, or jealousy, and he would probably have influenced him on another occasion. The interview, notwithstanding several artifices of the emperor to prevent it, took place at Marseilles with extraordinary pomp and demonstrations of confidence on both sides [see p. 138]; and the marriage, which the ambitious views of Catharine rendered in the end so pernicious to France, as it was then so dishonourable, was consummated. But what *schemes* may have been secretly concerted

pope and Francis in favour of the duke of Orleans, to whom his father proposed to make over all his rights in Italy; so careful were they to avoid giving any cause of offence to the emperor, that no treaty was concluded between them<sup>h</sup>; and even in the marriage-articles, Catharine renounced all claims and pretensions in Italy, except to the dutchy of Urbino<sup>i</sup>.

But at the very time when he was carrying on these negotiations, and forming this connection with Francis, which gave so great umbrage to the emperor, such was the artifice and duplicity of Clement's character, that he suffered the latter to direct all his proceedings with regard to the king of England, and was no less attentive to gratify him in that particular, than if the most cordial union had still subsisted between them. Henry's suit for a divorce had now continued near six years; during all which period the pope negotiated, promised, retracted, and concluded nothing. After bearing repeated delays and disappointments longer than could have been expected from a prince of such a choleric and impetuous temper, the patience of Henry was at last so much exhausted, that he applied to another tribunal for that decree which he had solicited in vain at Rome. Cranmer, archbishop of Canterbury, by a sentence founded on the authority of universities, doctors, and rabbies, who had been consulted with respect to the point, annulled the king's marriage with Catharine; her laughter was declared illegitimate; and Anne

<sup>h</sup> *Gaie.* l. xx. 555.

<sup>i</sup> *Du Mont. Corps Diplom.* iv. p. ii. 101.  
VOL. III.

Boleyne acknowledged as queen of England. At the same time Henry began not only to neglect and to threaten the pope, whom he hitherto courted, but to make innovations in church, of which he had formerly been so zealous defender. Clement, who had already seen so many provinces and kingdoms revolt from the holy see, became apprehensive at last that England might imitate their example, and from his sollicitude to prevent that fatal step, partly in compliance with the French king's citations, determined to give Henry such satisfaction as might still retain him within the bosom of the church. But the violence of the cardinals devoted to the emperor, did not allow the

overturned in a moment. Henry himself, with the caprice peculiar to his character, continued to defend the doctrines of the Romish church as fiercely as he attacked its jurisdiction. He alternately persecuted the protestants for rejecting the former, and the catholics for acknowledging the latter. But his subjects, being once permitted to enter into new paths, did not choose to stop short at the precise point prescribed by him. Having been encouraged by his example to break some of their fetters, they were so impatient to shake off what still remained<sup>k</sup>, that, in the following reign, with the applause of the greater part of the nation, a total separation was made from the church of Rome in articles of doctrine, as well as in matters of discipline and jurisdiction.

A short delay might have saved the see of Rome from all the unhappy consequences of Clement's rashness. Soon after his sentence against Henry, he fell into a languishing distemper, which gradually wasting his constitution, put an end to his pontificate [Sept. 25], the most unfortunate, both during its continuance, and by its effects, that the church had known for many ages. The very day on which the cardinals entered the conclave [Oct. 13], they raised to the papal throne Alexander Farnese, dean of the sacred college, and the oldest member of that body, who assumed the name of Paul III. The account of his promotion was received with extraordinary acclamations of joy by the people of Rome, *highly pleased*, after an interval of more

<sup>k</sup> Herbert. Burn. Hist. of Reform.

than an hundred years, to see the crown of St. Peter placed on the head of a Roman citizen. Persons more capable of judging, formed a favourable preface of his administration, from the experience which he had acquired under four pontificates, as well as the character of prudence and moderation which he had uniformly maintained in a station of great eminence, and during an active period that required both talents and address <sup>1</sup>.

Europe, it is probable, owed the continuance of its peace to the death of Clement ; for although no traces remain in history of any league concluded between him and Francis, it is scarcely to be doubted but that he would have seconded the operations of the French arms in Italy, that he might have gratified his ambition by seeing one of his family possessed of the supreme power in Florence, and another in Milan. But upon the election of Paul III. who had hitherto adhered uniformly to the Imperial interest, Francis found it necessary to suspend his operations for some time, and to put off the commencement of hostilities against the emperor, on which, before the death of Clement, he had been fully determined.

While Francis waited for an opportunity to renew a war which had hitherto proved so fatal to himself and his subjects, a transaction of a very singular nature was carried on in Germany. Among many beneficial and salutary effects of which the reformation was the immediate cause *it was attended*, as must be the case in all action

<sup>1</sup> Guic. l. xx. 556. F. Paul, 64.

and events wherein men are concerned, with some consequences of an opposite nature. When the human mind is roused by grand objects, and agitated by strong passions, its operations acquire such force that they are apt to become irregular and extravagant. Upon any great revolution in religion, such irregularities abound most, at that particular period, when men, having thrown off the authority of their ancient principles, do not yet fully comprehend the nature, or feel the obligation of those new tenets which they have embraced. The mind, in that situation, pushing forward with the boldness which prompted it to reject established opinions, and not guided by a clear knowledge of the system substituted in their place, disdains all restraint, and runs into wild notions, which often lead to scandalous or immoral conduct. Thus, in the first ages of the Christian church, many of the new converts, having renounced their ancient systems of religious faith, and being but imperfectly acquainted with the doctrines and precepts of Christianity, broached the most extravagant opinions, equally subversive of piety and virtue; all which errors disappeared or were exploded when the knowledge of religion increased, and came to be more generally diffused. In like manner, soon after Luther's appearance, the rashness or ignorance of some of his disciples led them to publish tenets no less absurd than pernicious, which being proposed to men extremely illiterate, but fond of novelty, and at a time when their minds were occupied chiefly with religious speculations, gained too easy credit and authority among them. To these causes must be imputed the extravagances of Muncer, in th



year one thousand five hundred and twenty-five, as well as the rapid progress which his opinions made among the peasants ; but though the insurrection excited by that fanatic was soon suppressed, several of his followers lurked in different places, and endeavoured privately to propagate his opinions.

In those provinces of Upper Germany, which had already been so cruelly wasted by their enthusiastic rage, the magistrates watched their motions with such severe attention, that many of them found it necessary to retire into other countries, some were punished, others driven into exile, and their errors were entirely rooted out. But in the Netherlands and Westphalia, where

maintained that, among Christians who had the precepts of the gospel to direct, and the spirit of God to guide them, the office of magistracy was not only unnecessary, but an unlawful encroachment on their spiritual liberty; that the distinctions occasioned by birth, or rank, or wealth, being contrary to the spirit of the gospel, which considers all men as equal, should be entirely abolished; that all Christians, throwing their possessions into one common stock, should live together in that state of equality which becomes members of the same family; that as neither the laws of nature, nor the precepts of the New Testament, had imposed any restraints upon men with regard to the number of wives which they might marry, they should use that liberty which God himself had granted to the patriarchs.

Such opinions, propagated and maintained with enthusiastic zeal and boldness, were not long without producing the violent effects natural to them. Two Anabaptist prophets, John Matthias, a baker of Haerlem, and John Boccold, or Beïkels, a journeyman taylor of Leyden, possessed with the rage of making profelytes, fixed their residence at Munster, an Imperial city in Westphalia, of the first rank, under the sovereignty of its bishop, but governed by its own senate and consuls. As neither of these fanatics wanted the talents requisite in desperate enterprises, great resolution, the appearance of sanctity, bold pretensions to inspiration, and a confident and *plausible manner of discoursing*, they soon gained *many converts*. Among these were Rothman *who had first preached the protestant doctrine* i  
Munst

Munster, and Cnipperdoling, a citizen of birth and considerable eminence. Emboldened by the countenance of such disciples, openly taught their opinions; and not satisfied with that liberty, they made several attempts though without success, to become masters of the town, in order to get their tenets established in public authority. At last, having secretly in their associates from the neighbouring country, they suddenly took possession of the senate-house in the night-time, and rushed through the streets with drawn swords, horrible howlings, cried out alternately, "Repent and be baptised," and "Depart, ye godly." The senators, the canons, the nobles together with the more sober citizens, whether papists or protestants, terrified at their threats and outcries, fled in confusion, and left the city under the dominion of a frantic multitude consisting chiefly of strangers [February]. The first thing now remaining to overawe or control the mob, they set about modelling the government according to their own wild ideas: and though they shewed so much reverence for the constitution, as to elect senators of their own sect, and to appoint Cnipperdoling and a profelyte consuls, this was nothing more than form; for all their proceedings were directed by Matthias, who, in the style, and with the authority of a prophet, uttered his commands, it was instant death to disobey. Having encouraged the multitude to pillage churches, and deface their ornaments; he exhorted them to destroy all books except the bible, as *useless or impious*; he ordered the estates

as fled, to be confiscated, and sold to the inhabitants of the adjacent country; he commanded every man to bring forth his gold, silver, and other precious effects, and to lay them at his feet; the wealth amassed by these means, he deposited in a public treasury, and named deacons to dispense it for the common use of all. The members of this commonwealth being thus brought to a perfect equality, he commanded all of them to eat at tables prepared in public, and even prescribed the dishes which were to be served up each day. Having finished his plan of reformation, his next care was to provide for the defence of the city; and he took measures for that purpose with a prudence which favoured nothing of fanaticism. He collected large magazines of every kind; he repaired and extended the fortifications, obliging every person without distinction to work in his turn; he formed such as were capable of bearing arms into regular bodies, and endeavoured to add the stability of discipline to the impetuosity of enthusiasm. He sent emissaries to the Anabaptists in the Low-Countries, inviting them to assemble at Munster, which he dignified with the name of Mount Sion, that from thence they might set out to reduce all the nations of the earth under their dominion. He himself was unwearied in attending to every thing necessary for the security or increase of the sect; animating his disciples by his own example to decline no labour, as well as to submit to every hardship; and their enthusiastic passions being kept from subsiding by a perpetual succession of exhortations, revelations, and prophecies, they seemed read

to undertake or to suffer any thing in  
nance of their opinions.

While they were thus employed, the  
of Munster having assembled a considerable  
advanced to besiege the town. On his  
Matthias sallied out at the head of four  
troops, attacked one quarter of his ene-  
it, and after great slaughter returned re-  
loaded with glory and spoil. Intoxicated  
this success, he appeared next day in  
spear, and declared, that, in imitation of  
he would go forth with a handful of  
smite the host of the ungodly. Thirty  
whom he named, followed him without  
in this wild enterprise [May], and, re-  
the enemy with a frantic courage, we-  
to a man. The death of their prophet  
at first great consternation among his  
but Boccold, by the same gifts and po-  
which had gained Matthias credit, for-  
their spirits and hopes to such a degree  
succeeded the deceased prophet in the  
solite direction of all their affairs. As  
not possess that enterprising courage w-  
tinguished his predecessor, he satisfied

pared the multitude for some extraordinary event, he stripped himself naked, and, marching through the streets, proclaimed with a loud voice, "That the kingdom of Sion was at hand; that whatever was highest on earth should be brought low, and whatever was lowest should be exalted." In order to fulfil this, he commanded the churches, as the most lofty buildings in the city, to be levelled with the ground; he degraded the senators chosen by Matthias, and depriving Cniperdoling of the consulship, the highest office in the commonwealth, appointed him to execute the lowest and most infamous, that of common hangman, to which strange transition the other agreed, not only without murmuring, but with the utmost joy; and such was the despotic rigour of Boccold's administration, that he was called almost every day to perform some duty or other of his wretched function. In place of the deposed senators, he named twelve judges, according to the number of tribes in Israel, to preside in all affairs; retaining to himself the same authority which Moses anciently possessed as legislator of that people.

Not satisfied, however, with power or titles, which were not supreme, a prophet, whom he had gained and tutored, having called the multitude together, declared it to be the will of God, that John Boccold should be king of Sion, and sit on the throne of David. John kneeling down, accepted of the heavenly call [June 24], which he solemnly protested had been revealed likewise to *himself*, and was immediately acknowledged as monarch by the deluded multitude. From that moment he assumed all the  
sta

state and pomp of royalty. He wore a crown of gold, and was clad in the richest and most sumptuous garments. A bible was carried on his one hand, a naked sword on the other. A great body of guards accompanied him when he appeared in public. He coined money stamped with his own image, and appointed the great officers of his household and kingdom, among whom Chipperdoling was nominated governor of the city, as a reward for his former submission.

Having now attained the height of power, Boccold began to discover passions, which he had hitherto restrained, or indulged only in secret. As the excesses of enthusiasm have been observed in every age to lead to sensual gratifications, the same constitution that is susceptible of the former, being remarkably prone to the latter, he instructed the prophets and teachers to harangue the people for several days concerning the lawfulness, and even necessity, of taking more wives than one, which they asserted to be one of the privileges granted by God to the saints. When their ears were once accustomed to this licentious doctrine, and their passions inflamed with the prospect of such unbounded indulgence, he himself set them an example of using what he called their Christian liberty, by marrying at once three wives, among which the widow of Matthias, a woman of singular beauty, was one. As he was allured by beauty, or the love of variety, he gradually added to the number of his wives, until they amounted to fourteen, though the widow of Matthias was the only one dignified with the title of Queen, or who shared with him

ple of their prophet, the multitude gave us up to the most licentious and uncon-  
 ratification of their desires. No man  
 satisfied with a single wife. Not to  
 Christian liberty was deemed a crime.  
 were appointed to search the houses for  
 omen grown up to maturity, whom they  
 compelled to marry. Together with  
 r, freedom of divorce, its inseparable  
 , was introduced, and became a new  
 f corruption. Every excess was com-  
 f which the passions of men are capable,  
 rained neither by the authority of laws  
 sense of decency<sup>m</sup>; and by a monstrous  
 ost incredible conjunction, voluptuous-  
 engrafted on religion, and dissolute  
 mpanied the austerities of fanatical de-

while the German princes were highly  
 at the insult offered to their dignity by  
 s presumptuous usurpation of royal hon-  
 nd the profligate manners of his follow-

etæ & concionatorum autoritate juxta et exemplo,  
 i rapiendas pulcherrimas quasque sæminas discurs-  
 lec intra paucos dies, in tanta hominum turbâ fere  
 est supra annum decimum quartum quæ stregam  
 erit. Lamb. Hortens. p. 303. Vulgò viris quinas  
 pluribus senas, nonnullis septenas & octonas. Pu-  
 tuodecimum ætatis annum statim amare. Id. 305.  
 contentus fuit, neque cuiquam extra effætas &  
 uras continenti esse licuit. Id. 307. Tacebo hîc,  
 bonor auribus, quanta barbariæ et malitiâ ugi sunt  
 iatiandis nondum aptis matrimonio, id quod mihi  
 10, neque ex vulgi sermonibus haustum est, sed  
 cui cura sic viciatarum demandata fuit, abdi-  
 orvius, 316.



ers, which were a reproach to the Christian name, filled men of all professions with horror. Luther, who had testified against this fanatical spirit on its first appearance, now deeply lamented its progress, and having exposed the delusion with great strength of argument, as well as acrimony of style, called loudly on all the states of Germany to put a stop to a phrenzy no less pernicious to society, than fatal to religion. The emperor, occupied with other cares and projects, had not leisure to attend to such a distant object; but the princes of the empire assembled by the king of the Romans, voted a supply of men and money to the bishop of Munster, who being unable to keep a sufficient army on foot, had converted the siege of the town into a blockade [1535]. The forces raised in consequence of this resolution, were put under the command of an officer of experience, who approaching the town towards the end of spring, in the year one thousand five hundred and thirty-five, pressed it more closely than formerly; but found the fortifications so strong, and so diligently guarded, that he durst not attempt an assault. It was now about fifteen months since the anabaptists had established their dominion in Munster; they had during that time undergone prodigious fatigue in working on the fortifications, and performing military duty. Notwithstanding the prudent attention of their king to provide for their subsistence, and his frugal as well as regular œconomy in their public meals, they began to feel the approach of famine [May]. Several small bodies of their brethren, who were advancing to their assistance from the Low-Countries, had been in

ed and cut to pieces ; and while all Ger-  
 was ready to combine against them, they  
 prospect of succour. But such was the  
 ant which Boccold had acquired over the  
 de, and so powerful the fascination of en-  
 n, that their hopes were as sanguine as  
 and they hearkened with implicit credulity  
 visions and predictions of their prophets,  
 ssured them that the Almighty would  
 y interpose, in order to deliver the city.  
 ith, however, of some few, shaken by the  
 e and length of their sufferings, began to  
 ut being suspected of an inclination to  
 ler to the enemy, they were punished with  
 late death, as guilty of impiety in distrust-  
 : power of God. One of the king's wives,  
 uttered certain words which implied some  
 concerning his divine mission, he instantly  
 the whole number together, and command-  
 : blasphemer, as he called her, to kneel  
 cut off her head with his own hands ; and  
 were the rest from expressing any horror  
 cruel deed, that they joined him in dancing  
 frantic joy around the bleeding body of  
 ompanion.

this time [ June 1 ], the besieged endured the  
 rigour of famine ; but they chose rather to  
 hardships, the recital of which is shocking to  
 ity, than to listen to the terms of capitula-  
 ferred them by the bishop. At last, a de-  
 whom they had taken into their service,  
 either less intoxicated with the fumes of  
*iasm*, or *unable* any longer to bear such  
*made his escape* to the enemy. He in-  
*their general* of a weak part in the for-  
 H 2 tification

tifications which he had observed, and a him that the besieged, exhausted with hung fatigue, kept watch there with little ca offered to lead a party thither in the night. proposal was accepted, and a chosen of troops appointed for the service; scaling the walls unperceived, seized the gates, and admitted the rest of the The anabaptists, though surpris'd, de themselves in the market-place with heightened by despair; but being over ed by numbers, and surrounded on every most of them were slain, and the rem taken prisoners [June 24]. Among the last the king and Cnipperdoling. The king, with chains, was carried from city to city spectacle to gratify the curiosity of the p and was expos'd to all their insults. His however, was not broken or humbled by sad reverse of his condition; and he ad with unshaken firmness to the distinguishi nets of his sect. After this, he was br back to Munster, the scene of his royalt crimes, and put to death with the most exc as well as lingering tortures, all which he with astonishing fortitude. This extraord man, who had been able to acquire such a ing dominion over the minds of his followers to excite commotions so dangerous to so was only twenty-six years of age<sup>n</sup>.

<sup>n</sup> Sleid. 190, &c. Tumultuum anabaptitarum liber Ant. Lamberto Hortensio auctore ap. Scardium, v p. 298, &c. De Miserabili Monasteriensium Obsidione Libellus Antonii Corvini ap. Scar. 313. Annales A Joh. Henrico Ottio, 4to. Basileæ, 1672. *ius Hist. Anab.* edit. 1637, p. 140.

Together with its monarch, the kingdom of the anabaptists came to an end. Their principles having taken deep root in the Low-Countries, the party still subsists there, under the name of Mennonites; but by a very singular revolution, this sect, so mutinous and sanguinary at its first origin, hath become altogether innocent and pacific. Holding it unlawful to wage war, or to accept of civil offices, they devote themselves entirely to the duties of private citizens, and by their industry and charity endeavour to make reparation to human society for the violence committed by their founders". A small number of this sect, which is settled in England, retain its peculiar tenets concerning baptism, but without any dangerous mixture of enthusiasm.

The mutiny of the anabaptists, though it drew general attention, did not so entirely engross the princes of Germany, as not to allow leisure for other transactions. The alliance between the French king and the confederates at Smalkalde, began about this time to produce great effects. Ulric, duke of Wurtemberg, having been expelled his dominions in the year one thousand five hundred and nineteen, on account of his violent and oppressive administration, the house of Austria had got possession of his duchy. That prince having now by a long exile atoned for the errors in his conduct, which were the effect rather of inexperience than of a tyrannical disposition, was become the object of general compassion. The landgrave of Hesse, in particular, his near relation, warmly espoused his

interest, and used many efforts to recover for him his antient inheritance. But the king of the Romans obstinately refused to relinquish a valuable acquisition which his family had made with so much ease. The landgrave, unable to compel him, applied to the king of France, his new ally Francis, eager to embrace any opportunity distressing the house of Austria, and desirous wresting from it a territory which gave it footing and influence in a part of Germany at a distance from its other dominions, encouraged the landgrave to take arms, and secretly supplied him with a large sum of money. This he employed to raise troops; and marching with great expedition towards Wurtemberg, attacked, defeated, and dispersed a considerable body of Austrians entrusted with the defence of the country. At the duke's subjects hastened, with emulation, to receive their native prince, and re-invested him with that authority which is still enjoyed by his descendants. At the same time the exercise of the protestant religion was established in his dominions.

Ferdinand, how sensible soever of this unexpected blow, not daring to attack a prince who had all the protestant powers in Germany were ready to support, judged it expedient to conclude a treaty with him, by which, in the most advantageous form, he recognised his title to the dutchy. The success of the landgrave's operations, on behalf of the duke of Wurtemberg, having convinced Ferdinand that a rupture with a league so formidable as that of Smalkalde, was to

avoided with the utmost care, he entered likewise into a negotiation with the elector of Saxony, the head of that union, and by some concessions in favour of the protestant religion, and others of advantage to the elector himself, he prevailed on him, together with his confederates, to acknowledge his title as king of the Romans. At the same time, in order to prevent any such precipitate or irregular election in times to come, it was agreed that no person should hereafter be promoted to that dignity without the unanimous consent of the electors; and the emperor soon after confirmed this stipulation.

These acts of indulgence towards the protestants, and the close union into which the king of the Romans seemed to be entering with the princes of that party, gave great offence at Rome. Paul III., though he had departed from a resolution of his predecessor, never to consent to the calling of a general council, and had promised, in the first consistory held after his election, that he would convoke that assembly so much desired by all Christendom, was no less enraged than Clement at the innovations in Germany, and no less averse to any scheme for reforming either the doctrines of the church, or the abuses in the court of Rome: but having been a witness of the universal censure which Clement had incurred by his obstinacy with regard to these points, he hoped to avoid the same reproach by the seeming alacrity with which he proposed a council; flattering himself, however, that such difficulties *would arise concerning the time and place of*

meeting, the persons who had a right to be present, and the order of their proceedings, as would effectually defeat the intention of those who demanded that assembly, without exposing himself to any imputation for refusing to call it. With this view he dispatched nuncios to the several courts, in order to make known his intention, and that he had fixed on Mantua as a proper place in which to hold the council. Such difficulties as the pope had foreseen, immediately presented themselves in great number. The French king did not approve of the place which Paul had chosen, as the papal and Imperial influence would necessarily be too great in a town situated in that part of Italy. The king of England not only concurred with Francis in urging that objection, but refused, besides, to acknowledge any council called in the name and by the authority of the pope. The German protestants having met together at Smalkalde [Dec. 12], insisted on their original demand of a council to be held in Germany, and pleading the emperor's promise, as well as the agreement at Ratisbon to that effect, declared that they would not consider an assembly held at Mantua as a legal or free representative of the church. By this diversity of sentiments and views, such a field for intrigue and negotiation opened, as made it easy for the pope to assume the merit of being eager to assemble a council, while at the same time he could put off its meeting at pleasure. The protestants, on the other hand, suspecting his designs, and *sensible* of the importance which they derived from their union, renewed for ten years the league

re formidable by the accession of several new members<sup>r</sup>.

During these transactions in Germany, the emperor undertook his famous enterprise against the piratical states in Africa. That part of the African continent lying along the coast of the Mediterranean sea, which antiently formed the kingdoms of Mauritania and Massylia, together with the republic of Carthage, and which is now known by the general name of Barbary, had undergone many revolutions. Subdued by the Romans, it became a province of their empire. When it was conquered afterwards by the Vandals, they erected a kingdom there. That being overturned by Bellisarius, the country became subject to the Greek emperors, and continued to be so until it was over-run, towards the end of the seventh century, by the rapid and irresistible arms of the Arabians. It remained for some time a part of that vast empire which the Caliphs governed with absolute authority. Its immense distance, however, from the seat of government, encouraged the descendants of those leaders

<sup>r</sup> This league was concluded December, one thousand five hundred and thirty-five, but not extended or signed in form till September in the following year. The princes who acceded to it were, John elector of Saxony, Ernest duke of Brunswick, Philip landgrave of Hesse, Ulric duke of Wurtemberg, Barnim and Philip dukes of Pomerania, John George, and Joachim, princes of Anhalt, Gebhard and Albert counts of Mansfield, William count of Nassau. The cities *Strassburg, Nuremberg, Constance, Ulm, Magdeburg, Memmen, Reutlingen, Hailbron, Memmengen, Lindaw, Cambrin, Bibrac, Windsheim, Augsburg, Francfort, Ellingwick, Goslar, Hanover, Gottigen, Eimbeck, Harro Minden.*



who had subdued the country, or the chiefs of the Moors, its ancient inhabitants, to throw off the yoke, and to assert their independence. The caliphs, who derived their authority from a sort of enthusiasm, more fitted for making conquests than for preserving them, were obliged to submit to acts of rebellion which they could not prevent; and Barbary was divided into three kingdoms, of which Morocco, Algiers and Tunis were the most considerable. The inhabitants of these kingdoms were a mixed race of Arabs, negroes from the southern provinces of Africa, Moors, either natives of Africa, or who had been expelled out of Spain; all zealous professors of the Mahometan religion, and inflamed against Christianity with a bigoted hatred proportioned to their ignorance and barbarous manners.

Among these people, no less daring, constant, and treacherous, than the ancient inhabitants of the same country described by the Roman historians, frequent seditions broke out, and many changes in government took place. Though as they affected only the internal state of the country extremely barbarous, are but little known, and deserve to be so: but about the beginning of the sixteenth century, a sudden revolution happened, which, by rendering the power of Barbary formidable to the Europeans, made their history worthy of more attention. This revolution was brought about by persons born in a rank of life which entitled them to act no such illustrious part. Horuc and Ismael, the sons of a potter in the Isle of Ispahan, prompted by a restless and enterprising

crew of pirates. They soon distinguished themselves by their valour and activity, and becoming masters of a small brigantine, carried on their infamous trade with such conduct and success, that they assembled a fleet of twelve galleys, besides many vessels of smaller force. Of this fleet, Horuc, the elder brother, called Barbarossa, from the red colour of his beard, was principal, and Hayradin second in command, but with almost equal authority. They called themselves the friends of the sea, and the enemies of those who sail upon it; and their names soon became terrible from the Straits of the Dardanelles to those of Gibraltar. Together with their fame and power, their ambitious views extended, and while acting as corsairs, they adopted the ideas, and acquired the talents of conquerors. They then carried the prizes which they took on the coasts of Spain and Italy into the ports of Barbary, and enriching the inhabitants by the sale of their booty, and the thoughtless prodigality of their crews, were welcome guests in every place at which they touched. The convenient situation of these harbours, lying so near the most commercial states at that time in Christendom, made the brothers wish for an establishment in that country. An opportunity of accomplishing this quickly presented itself, which they did not suffer to pass unimproved. Eutim, king of Algiers, having attempted several times, without success, to take a fort which the Turkish governors of Oran had built not far from the capital, *was so ill-advised as to apply for aid to barbarossa, whose valour the Africans considered as irresistible.* The active corsair gladly accepted

accepted of the invitation, and leaving  
ther Hayradin with the fleet [1516],  
at the head of five thousand men to  
where he was received as their deliverer  
force gave him the command of the to  
as he perceived that the Moors neither  
him of any bad intentions, nor were cap  
their light-armed troops of opposing  
plined veterans, he secretly murdered the  
whom he had come to assist, and proclai  
self king of Algiers in his stead. The  
which he had thus boldly usurped, l  
voured to establish by arts suited to t  
of the people whom he had to govern ;  
rality without bounds to those who fav  
promotion, and by cruelty no less u  
towards all whom he had any reason t  
Not satisfied with the throne which h  
quired, he attacked the neighbouring  
Tremecen, and having vanquished hir  
tle, added his dominions to those of  
At the same time he continued to infest  
of Spain and Italy with fleets which  
the armaments of a great monarch, rat  
the light squadrons of a corsair. Thei  
and cruel devastations obliged Charles,

taken in attempting to make his escape, and slain while he fought with an obstinate valour, worthy his former fame and exploits.

His brother Hayradin, known likewise by the name of Barbarossa, assumed the sceptre of Algiers with the same ambition and abilities, but with better fortune. His reign being undisturbed by the arms of the Spaniards, which had full occupation in the wars among the European powers, he regulated with admirable prudence the interior police of his kingdom, carried on his naval operations with great vigour, and extended his conquests on the continent of Africa. But perceiving that the Moors and Arabs submitted to his government with the utmost reluctance, and being afraid that his continual depredations would, one day, draw upon him the arms of the Christians, he put his dominions under the protection of the Grand Seignior, and received from him a body of Turkish soldiers sufficient for his security against his domestic as well as his foreign enemies. At last, the fame of his exploits daily increasing, Solyman offered him the command of the Turkish fleet, as the only person whose valour and skill in naval affairs entitled him to command against Andrew Doria, the greatest sea-officer of that age. Proud of this distinction, Barbarossa repaired to Constantinople, and with a wonderful versatility of mind, mingling the arts of a courtier with the boldness of a corsair, gained the entire confidence both of the sultan and his vizier. To them he communicated a scheme which he had formed of making himself master of Tunis, the most flourishing kingdom, at that time, on the coast of Africa

and this being approved of by them, he of whatever he demanded for carrying it into execution.

His hopes of success in this undertaking were founded on the intestine divisions of the kingdom of Tunis. Mahmed, the last king of that country, having thirty-four sons by as many wives, appointed Muley-Hascen, one of the youngest among them, to be his successor. A weak prince, who owed this preference, not to his own merit, but to the ascendant which his mother had acquired over a monarch, with age, first poisoned Mahmed his father, in order to prevent him from altering his disposition with respect to the succession; and then pursued the barbarous policy which prevails where polygamy is permitted, and the right of succession is not precisely fixed, he put to death his brothers whom he could get into his power. Alrafchid, one of the eldest, was so fortunate as to escape his rage; and finding a refuge among the wandering Arabs, made several attempts, by the assistance of some of their chiefs, to recover the throne, which of right belonged to him. But these proving unsuccessful, he retired to the Arabs, from their natural levity, being r

wn disposed him to believe or undertake  
 ing, to accompany him thither, promising  
 ffectual assistance from Solyman, whom he  
 ented to be the most generous, as well as  
 powerful monarch in the world. But no  
 were they arrived at Constantinople, than  
 eacherous corsair, regardless of all his pro-  
 to him, opened to the sultan a plan for  
 ering Tunis, and annexing it to the  
 sh empire, by making use of the name of  
 xiled prince, and co-operating with the  
 in the kingdom which was ready to de-  
 in his favour. Solyman approved, with  
 uch facility, of this perfidious proposal,  
 rely suitable to the character of its author,  
 together unworthy of a great prince. A  
 ful fleet and numerous army were soon  
 led; at the sight of which the credulous  
 hid flattered himself that he should soon  
 his capital in triumph.

just as this unhappy prince was going to  
 k, he was arrested by order of the Sultan,  
 up in the seraglio, and was never heard of

Barbarossa sailed with a fleet of two  
 ed and fifty vessels towards Africa. After  
 ng the coasts of Italy, and spreading terror  
 gh every part of that country, he appeared  
 Tunis; and landing his men, gave out that  
 he to assert the right of Alraschid, whom he  
 tended to have left sick aboard the admiral  
 . The fort of Goletta, which commands the  
 oon fell into his hands, partly by his own ad-  
*partly by the treachery of its commander;*  
*the inhabitants of Tunis, weary of Muley*  
*'s government, took arms, and declare*

for Alrafchid with such zeal and unanimity, as obliged the former to fly so precipitately, that he left all his treasures behind him. The gates were immediately set open to Barbarossa, as the restorer of their lawful sovereign. But when Alrafchid himself did not appear, and when instead of his name, that of Solyman alone was heard among the acclamations of the Turkish soldiers marching into the town, the people of Tunis began to suspect the corsair's treachery. Their suspicions being soon converted into certainty, they ran to arms with the utmost fury, and surrounded the citadel, into which Barbarossa had led his troops. But having foreseen such a revolution, he was not unprepared for it: he immediately turned against them the artillery on the ramparts, and by one brisk discharge, dispersed the numerous but undirected assailants, and forced them to acknowledge Solyman as their sovereign, and to submit to himself as his viceroy.

His first care was to put the kingdom, of which he had thus got possession, in a proper posture of defence. He strengthened the citadel which commands the town; and fortifying the Goletta in a regular manner, at vast expence, made it the principal station for his fleet, and his great arsenal for military as well as naval stores. Being now possessed of such extensive territories, he carried on his depredations against the Christian states to a greater extent, and with more destructive violence than ever. Daily complaints *of the outrages* committed by his cruisers were brought to the emperor by his subjects, both in

expect from him, as its greatest and most fortunate prince, that he would put an end to this new and odious species of oppression. At the same time Muley-Hascen, the exiled king of Tunis, finding none of the Mahometan princes in Africa willing or able to assist him in recovering his throne, applied to Charles [April 21, 1535], as the only person who could assert his rights in opposition to such a formidable usurper. The emperor, equally desirous of delivering his dominions from the dangerous neighbourhood of Barbarossa; of appearing as the protector of an unfortunate prince; and of acquiring the glory annexed in that age to every expedition against the Mahometans, readily concluded a treaty with Muley-Hascen, and began to prepare for invading Tunis. Having made trial of his own abilities for war in the late campaign in Hungary, he was now become so fond of the military character, that he determined to command on this occasion in person. The united strength of his dominions was called out upon an enterprize in which the emperor was about to hazard his glory, and which drew the attention of all Europe. A Flemish fleet carried from the ports of the Low-Country a body of German infantry<sup>a</sup>; the galleys of Naples and Sicily took on board the veteran bands of Italians and Spaniards, which had distinguished themselves by so many victories over the French; the emperor himself embarked at Barcelona with the flower of the Spanish nobility, and was joined by a considerable squadron from Portugal, under the command of the Infan-

<sup>a</sup> *Hierxi Annales* Brabant. i. 539.



Don Lewis, the empress's brother ; Andrew Doria conducted his own gallies, the best appointed at that time in Europe, and commanded by the most skilful officers ; the pope furnished all the assistance in his power towards such a pious enterprize ; and the order of Malta, the perpetual enemies of the Infidels, equipped a squadron, which, though small, was formidable by the valour of the knights who served on board it. The port of Cagliari in Sardinia was the general place of rendezvous. Doria was appointed high-admiral of the fleet ; the command of the land-forces under the emperor was given to the marquis de Gualto.

On the sixteenth of July, the fleet, consisting of near five hundred vessels, having on board above thirty thousand regular troops, set sail from Cagliari, and after a prosperous navigation landed within sight of Tunis. Barbarossa having received early intelligence of the emperor's immense armament, and suspecting its destination, prepared with equal prudence and vigour for the defence of his new conquest. He called in all his corsairs from their different stations ; he drew from Algiers what forces could be spared ; he dispatched messengers to all the African princes, Moors as well as Arabs, and by representing Muley-Hascen as an infamous apostate, prompted by ambition and revenge, not only to become the vassal of a Christian prince, but to conspire with him to extirpate the Mahomedan faith, he inflamed those ignorant and bigotted chiefs to such a degree, that they took arms as in a common cause. Twenty thousand horse, together with a

by a proper distribution of presents among them from time to time, Barbarossa kept them united, which had brought them together from all quarters. But as he was too well acquainted with his enemy whom he had to oppose, to think that these light troops could resist the heavy-cavalry and veteran infantry which composed the Imperial army, his chief confidence was in the strength of the Goletta, and in his choice of Turkish soldiers, who were armed and dressed after the European fashion. Six hundred of these, under the command of Sinan, a Geno Jew, the bravest and most experienced of his corsairs, he threw into that fort, which the emperor immediately invested. As Charles possessed the command of the sea, his camp was fully supplied not only with the necessaries, but with all the luxuries of life, that Muley-Mehmed, who had not been accustomed to see things carried on with such order and magnificence, looked on with admiration of the emperor's arrangements. His troops, animated by his presence, considering it as meritorious to shed their blood in such a pious cause, contended with each other for the posts of honour and danger. Three successive attacks were concerted, and the German, Spaniards, and Italians, having one of them committed to each of them, pushed them forward with the eager courage which national emulation inspires. Sinan displayed resolution still becoming the confidence which his past success had put in him; the garrison performed their duty with service on which they were ordered to stand with fortitude. But though he interrupted their progress by frequent sallies, though the

Mo

Moors and Arabs alarmed the camp with continual incursions; the breaches soon became so considerable towards the land, while the battered those parts of the fortifications which it could approach with no less fury and success, that an assault being given on all sides at once, the place was taken by storm [July 25]. Still, with the remains of his garrison, retired, after an obstinate resistance, over a shallow part of the bay towards the city. By the reduction of the Goletta, the emperor became master of Barbarossa's fleet, consisting of eighty-seven gallies, galliots, together with his arsenal, and several hundred cannon, mostly brass, which were planted on the ramparts; a prodigious number in that age, and a remarkable proof of the strength of the fort, as well as of the greatness of the corsair's power. The emperor marched into the Goletta through the breach, and turned to Muley-Hascen who attended him, "He says he, "is a gate open to you, by which you shall return to take possession of your dominions."

Barbarossa, though he felt the full weight of the blow which he had received, did not, however, lose courage, or abandon the defence of Tunis. But as the walls were of great extent and extremely weak; as he could not depend on the fidelity of the inhabitants, nor hope that the Moors and Arabs would sustain the hardships of a siege, he boldly determined to advance his army, which amounted to fifty thousand men, towards the Imperial camp, and to

e of his kingdom by the issue of a battle. resolution he communicated to his principal , and representing to them the fatal consequences which might follow, if ten thousand slaves, whom he had shut up in the , should attempt to mutiny during the absence of the army, he proposed, as a necessary precaution for the public security, to massacre without mercy before he began his march.

all approved warmly of his intention to but inured as they were, in their piratical operations, to scenes of bloodshed and cruelty, the barbarity of his proposal concerning the slaves affected them with horror; and Barbarossa, rather than he dread of irritating them, than swayed by the ties of humanity, consented to spare the lives of the slaves.

this time the emperor had begun to advance towards Tunis; and though his troops endured considerable hardships in their march, burning sands, destitute of water, and exposed to the intolerable heat of the sun, they came up with the enemy. The Moors and , emboldened by their vast superiority in number, immediately rushed on to the attack with loud shouts, but their undisciplined courage did not long stand the shock of regular battle; and though Barbarossa, with admirable presence of mind, and by exposing his own person to the greatest dangers, endeavoured to rally the rout became so general, that he himself was hurried along with them in their flight to the city. There he found every thing in the utmost confusion; some of the inhabitants fled with their families and effects; others remained

ready to set open their gates to the conqueror; the Turkish soldiers preparing to retreat; and the citadel, which in such circumstances might have afforded him some refuge, already in the possession of the Christian captives. These unhappy men, rendered desperate by their situation, had laid hold on the opportunity which Barbarossa dreaded. As soon as his army was at some distance from the town, they gained two of their keepers, by whose assistance knocking off their fetters, and bursting open their prisons, they overpowered the Turkish garrison, and turned the artillery of the fort against their former masters. Barbarossa, disappointed and enraged, exclaiming sometimes against the false compassion of his officers, and sometimes condemning his own imprudent compliance with their opinion, fled precipitately to Bona.

Meanwhile Charles, satisfied with the easy and almost bloodless victory which he had gained, and advancing slowly with the precaution necessary in an enemy's country, did not yet know the whole extent of his own good fortune. But at last, a messenger dispatched by the slaves acquainted him with the success of their noble effort for the recovery of their liberty; and at the same time deputies arrived from the town, in order to present him the keys of their gates, and to implore his protection from military violence. While he was deliberating concerning the proper measures for this purpose, the soldiers, fearing that they should be deprived of the booty which they had expected, rushed suddenly, and without orders, into the town, and began to kill and plunder without distinction.

1. The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions and activities. It emphasizes that this is crucial for ensuring transparency and accountability in the organization's operations.

2. The second part outlines the various methods and tools used to collect and analyze data. It mentions the use of surveys, interviews, and focus groups to gather information from stakeholders. Additionally, it discusses the application of statistical analysis to interpret the collected data.

3. The third part describes the process of identifying trends and patterns in the data. It highlights the need for a systematic approach to data analysis, involving the identification of key variables and the use of appropriate statistical tests to validate findings.

4. The fourth part focuses on the communication of results. It stresses the importance of presenting the findings in a clear and concise manner, using visual aids such as charts and graphs to enhance understanding. It also mentions the need to tailor the communication to the specific audience, ensuring that the information is relevant and actionable.

5. The final part of the document provides a summary of the key findings and conclusions. It reiterates the importance of ongoing monitoring and evaluation to ensure that the organization remains effective and responsive to changing circumstances.

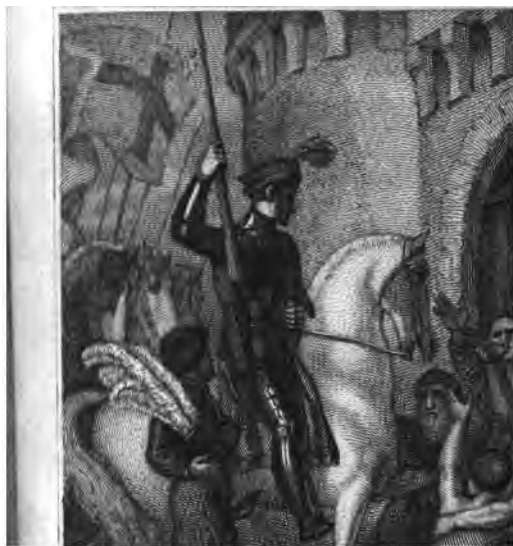
1. The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions and activities. It emphasizes that this is crucial for ensuring transparency and accountability in the organization's operations.

2. The second part outlines the various methods and tools used to collect and analyze data. It mentions the use of surveys, interviews, and focus groups to gather information from stakeholders. Additionally, it discusses the application of statistical analysis to interpret the collected data.

3. The third part describes the process of identifying trends and patterns in the data. It highlights the need for a systematic approach to data analysis, involving the identification of key variables and the use of appropriate statistical tests to validate findings.

4. The fourth part focuses on the communication of results. It stresses the importance of presenting the findings in a clear and concise manner, using visual aids such as charts and graphs to enhance understanding. It also mentions the need to tailor the communication to the specific audience, ensuring that the information is relevant and actionable.

5. The final part of the document provides a summary of the key findings and conclusions. It reiterates the importance of ongoing monitoring and evaluation to ensure that the organization remains effective and responsive to changing circumstances.



tion. It was then too late to restrain their  
 y, their avarice, or licentiousness. All  
 atrages of which soldiers are capable in the  
 of a storm, all the excesses of which men  
 e guilty when their passions are heightened  
 e contempt and hatred which difference in  
 ers and religion inspire, were committed.  
 e thirty thousand of the innocent inhabitants  
 ed on that unhappy day, and ten thousand  
 carried away as slaves. Muley-Hascen  
 possession of a throne surrounded with car-  
 abhorred by his subjects on whom he had  
 ist such calamities, and pitied even by  
 whose rashness had been the occasion of

The emperor lamented the fatal ac-  
 : which had stained the lustre of this  
 y ; and amidst such a scene of horror  
 was but one spectacle that afforded him  
 itisfaction. Ten thousand Christian slaves,  
 y whom were several persons of distinction,  
 im as he entered the town ; and falling on  
 knees, thanked and blessed him as their  
 rer.

the same time that Charles accomplished  
 omise to the Moorish king, of re-establish-  
 im in his dominions, he did not neglect  
 was necessary for bridling the power of  
 frican corsairs, for the security of his own  
 ts, and for the interest of the Spanish  
 l. In order to gain these ends, he con-  
 l a treaty with Muley-Hascen on the fol-  
 g conditions: that he should hold the  
 om of Tunis in fee of the crown of Spain,  
 homage to the emperor as his liege lord ;  
 the Christian slaves now within his do-  
 minion



minions, of whatever nation, should be set at liberty without ransom; that no subject of the emperor's should for the future be detained in servitude; that no Turkish corsair should be admitted into the ports of his dominions; that free trade, together with the public exercise of the Christian religion, should be allowed to the emperor's subjects; that the emperor should not only retain the Goletta, but that all other sea-ports in the kingdom which were fortified should be put into his hands; that Mu Hascen should pay annually twelve thousand crowns for the subsistence of the Spanish garrison in the Goletta; that he should enter into alliance with any of the emperor's enemies, should present to him every year, as an acknowledgment of his vassalage, six Moorish horses and as many hawks<sup>u</sup>. Having thus settled the affairs of Africa; chastised the insolence of corsairs; secured a safe retreat for the ships of his subjects, and a proper station to his own fleet on that coast from which he was most infested by piratical depredations; Charles embarked again for Europe [Aug. 17], the tempestuous weather, and sickness among his troops, not permitting him to pursue Barbarossa<sup>x</sup>.

By this expedition, the merit of which still to have been estimated in that age, rather by

<sup>u</sup> Du Mont Corps Diplomat. ii. 128. Summiante di Napoli, iv 89.

<sup>x</sup> Joh. Etropii Diarium Expedition. Tunetanzæ. Scard. v. ii. p 320, &c. Jovii Histor. lib. xxxiv. &c. Sandov. ii. 154, &c. Vertot Hist. de Chevalier de Malthe. Epistres des Princes, par Ruscelli, traduit par Belleforest, p. 110, 120, &c. Anton. Pontii Co

at generosity of the undertaking, the magnitude wherewith it was conducted, and the which crowned it, than by the importance consequences that attended it, the emperor had a greater height of glory, than at any period of his reign. Twenty thousand whom he freed from bondage, either by force, or by his treaty with Muley-Hascen, whom he clothed and furnished with the means of returning to their respective countries, over all Europe the fame of their benevolence, extolling his power and magnificence, with the exaggeration flowing from pride and admiration. In comparison with the other monarchs of Europe made an innumerable figure. They seemed to be solicitous about nothing but their private and particular interests; while Charles, with an elevation of mind which became the first prince in the world, appeared to be concerned for the glory of the Christian name, and attentive to public security and welfare.

## BOOK VI.

UNFORTUNATELY for the reputation of Francis among his contemporaries, his conduct, at length, appeared a perfect contrast to that of his rival, as he laid hold on the opportunity

*Summonte Hist. de Nap. vol. iv. p. 103.*

6

K

afforded

afforded him, by the emperor's having turned his whole force against the common enemy of Christendom, to revive his pretensions in Italy, and to plunge Europe into a new war. The treaty of Cambray, as has been observed, did not remove the causes of enmity between the two contending princes; it covered up, but did not extinguish the flames of discord. Francis in particular, who waited with impatience for a proper occasion of recovering the reputation as well as the territories which he had lost, continued to carry on his negotiations in different courts against the emperor, taking the utmost pains to heighten the jealousy which many princes entertained of his power or designs, and to inspire the rest with the same suspicion and fear: among others, he applied to Francis Sforza, who, though indebted to Charles for the possession of the duchy of Milan, had received it on such hard conditions, as rendered him not only a vassal of the empire, but a tributary dependant upon the emperor. The honour of having married the emperor's niece did not reconcile him to this ignominious state of subjection, which became so intolerable even to Sforza, though a weak and poor-spirited prince, that he listened with eagerness to the first proposals Francis made of rescuing him from the yoke. These proposals were conveyed to him by Maraviglia, or Merveille, as he is called by the French historians, a Milanese gentleman residing at Paris; and soon after, in order to carry on the negotiation with greater advantage, Merveille was *sent to Milan*, on pretence of visiting his relations, but with secret credentials from Francis *as his envoy*. In this character he was received

1. But notwithstanding his care to  
 circumstance concealed, Charles suf-  
 r having received information of it, re-  
 l and threatened with such an high  
 : the duke and his ministers, equally  
 d, gave the world immediately a most  
 proof of their servile fear of offending  
 or. As Merveille had neither the pru-  
 the temper which the function wherein  
 employed required, they artfully decoyed  
 quarrel, in which he happened to kill  
 nist, one of the duke's domestics, and  
 tantly seized him, they ordered him to  
 for that crime, and to be beheaded  
 33.]. Francis, no less astonished at  
 ion of a character held sacred among  
 uncivilized nations, than enraged at the  
 ed to the dignity of his crown, threat-  
 za with the effects of his indignation,  
 lained to the emperor, whom he con-  
 the real author of that unexampled  
 But receiving no satisfaction from  
 appealed to all the princes of Europe,  
 lit himself now entitled to take ven-  
 e an injury, which it would have  
 sent and pusillanimous to let pass with

thus furnished with a pretext for be-  
 war, on which he had already resolved,  
 ed his efforts in order to draw in other  
 take part in the quarrel. But all his  
 or this purpose were disconcerted by  
 events. After having sacrificed the  
 the royal family of France by the  
 his son with Catharine of Medici, i  
 K 2  
 ord

order to gain Clement, the death of that pontiff had deprived him of all the advantages which he expected to derive from his friendship. Paul, his successor, though attached by inclination to the Imperial interest, seemed determined to maintain the neutrality suitable to his character as the common father of the contending princes. The king of England, occupied with domestic cares and projects, declined, for once, engaging in the affairs of the continent, and refused to assist Francis, unless he would imitate his example, in throwing off the papal supremacy. These disappointments led him to solicit, with greater earnestness, the aid of the protestant princes associated by the league of Smalkalde. That he might the more easily acquire their confidence, he endeavoured to accommodate himself to their predominant passion, zeal for their religious tenets. He affected a wonderful moderation with regard to the points in dispute; he permitted Bellay, his envoy in Germany, to explain his sentiments concerning some of the most important articles, in terms not far different from those used by the protestants<sup>a</sup>: he even condescended to invite Melancthon, whose gentle manners and pacific spirit distinguished him among the reformers, to visit Paris, that by his assistance he might concert the most proper measures for reconciling the contending sects which so unhappily divided the church<sup>b</sup>. These concessions must be considered rather as arts of policy, than the

<sup>a</sup> *Freheri Script. Rer. German.* iii. 354, &c. *Sleid. Hist.* 178. 183. *Seckend. lib.* iii. 103.

<sup>b</sup> *Camerarii Vita IPh. Melancthonis*, 129. Hag. 1655

sult of conviction ; for whatever impression the new opinions in religion had made on his sisters, the queen of Navarre and dutchess of Ferrara, the gaiety of Francis's own temper, and his love of pleasure, allowed him little leisure to examine theological controversies.

But soon after he lost all the fruits of this dissimulating artifice, by a step very inconsistent with his declarations to the German princes. This step, however, the prejudices of the age, and the religious sentiments of his own subjects, rendered it necessary for him to take. His close union with the king of England, an excommunicated heretic ; his frequent negotiations with the German protestants ; but above all, his giving public audience to an envoy from Sultan Solyman, had excited violent suspicions concerning the sincerity of his attachment to religion. To have attacked the emperor, who, on all occasions, made high pretensions to zeal in defence of the Catholic faith, and at the very juncture when he was preparing for his expedition against Barbarossa, which was then considered as a pious enterprise, would not have failed to confirm such unfavourable sentiments with regard to Francis, and called on him to vindicate himself by some extraordinary demonstration of his reverence for the established doctrines of the church. The indiscreet zeal of some of his subjects, who had imbibed the Protestant opinions, furnished him with such an occasion as he desired. They had affixed to the *statues of the Louvre*, and other public places, *libels containing* indecent reflections on the *rites and rites of the popish church*. Six persons concerned in this rash action were discovered.

discovered and seized. The king, in order to avert the judgments which it was supposed their blasphemies might draw down upon the nation, appointed a solemn procession. The holy sacrament was carried through the city in great pomp; Francis walked uncovered before it, bearing a torch in his hand; the princes of the blood supported the canopy over it; the nobles marched in order behind. In the presence of this numerous assembly, the king, accustomed to express himself on every subject in strong and animated language, declared, that if one of his hands were infected with heresy, he would cut it off with the other, and would not spare even his own children, if found guilty of that crime. As a dreadful proof of his being in earnest, the six unhappy persons were publicly burnt before the procession was finished, with circumstances of the most shocking barbarity attending their execution <sup>c</sup>.

The princes of the league of Smalkalde, filled with resentment and indignation at the cruelty with which their brethren were treated, could not conceive Francis to be sincere, when he offered to protect in Germany those very tenets, which he persecuted with such rigour in his own dominions; so that all Bellay's art and eloquence in vindicating his master, or apologising for his conduct, made but little impression upon them. They considered likewise, that the emperor, who hitherto had never employed violence against the doctrines of the reformers, nor even given them

<sup>c</sup> *Belcarii Comment. Rer. Gallic. 646. Sleid. Hist.*

in molestation in their progress, was now and by the agreement at Ratisbon, not to disturb such as had embraced the new opinions; the protestants wisely regarded this as a more certain and immediate security, than the precarious and distant hopes with which Francis endeavoured to allure them. Besides, the manner in which he had behaved to his allies at the peace of Cambray, was too recent to be forgotten, and did not encourage others to rely much on his friendship or generosity. Upon all these accounts, the protestant princes refused to assist the French king in any hostile attempt against the emperor. The elector of Saxony, the most liberal among them, in order to avoid giving umbrage to Charles, would not permit Melancthon to visit the court of France, although the reformer, flattered perhaps by the invitation of so great a monarch, or hoping that his presence there might be of signal advantage to the protestant cause, discovered a strong inclination to undertake the journey<sup>d</sup>.

But though none of the many princes who envied or dreaded the power of Charles, would second Francis's efforts in order to reduce and circumscribe it, he, nevertheless, commanded his army to advance towards the frontiers of Italy. His sole pretext for taking arms was that he might chastise the duke of Milan for his insolent and cruel breach of the law of nations, it might have been expected that the whole weight of his vengeance was to have fallen on his territories,

<sup>d</sup> *Ammerarii Vita Melan.* 142, &c. 415.      Seckend. lib.



But on a sudden, and at their very commencement, the operations of war took another direction. Charles duke of Savoy, one of the least active and able princes of the line from which he descended, had married Beatrix of Portugal, the sister of the empress. By her great talents, she soon acquired an absolute ascendant over her husband; and proud of her affinity to the emperor, or allured by the magnificent promises with which he flattered her ambition, she formed an union between the duke and the Imperial court, extremely inconsistent with that neutrality, which wise policy as well as the situation of his dominions had hitherto induced him to observe in all the quarrels between the contending monarchs. Francis was abundantly sensible of the distress to which he might be exposed, if, when he entered Italy, he should leave behind him the territories of a prince, devoted so obsequiously to the emperor, that he had sent his eldest son to be educated in the court of Spain, as a kind of hostage for his fidelity. Clement the Seventh, who had represented this danger in a strong light during his interview with Francis at Marseilles, suggested to him, at the same time, the proper method of guarding against it, having advised him to begin his operations against the Milanese, by taking possession of Savoy and Piedmont, as the only certain way of securing a communication with his own dominions. Francis, highly irritated with the duke on many accounts, particularly for having supplied the constable Bourbon with the money that enabled him to levy the body of troops which ruined the French army in the battle of Pavia, was not un-

ng to let him now feel both how deeply he  
 ited, and how severely he could punish these  
 ries. Nor did he want several pretexts which  
 some colour of equity to the violence that  
 attended. The territories of France and Sa-  
 lying contiguous to each other, and inter-  
 gled in many places, various disputes, un-  
 dable in such a situation, subsisted between  
 two sovereigns concerning the limits of their  
 tive property; and besides, Francis, in right  
 is mother Louise of Savoy, had large claims  
 the duke her brother, for her share in their  
 er's succession. Being unwilling, however,  
 begin hostilities without some cause of quarrel  
 e specious than these pretensions, many of  
 h were obsolete, and others dubious, he de-  
 ded permission to march through Piedmont  
 is way to the Milanese, hoping that the duke,  
 an excess of attachment to the Imperial in-  
 t, might refuse this request, and thus give a  
 ter appearance of justice to all his operations  
 ost him. But, if we may believe the histo-  
 of Savoy, who appear to be better informed  
 regard to this particular than those of  
 ice, the duke readily, and with a good grace,  
 ted what it was not in his power to deny,  
 ising free passage to the French troops as  
 desired; so that Francis, as the only method  
 left of justifying the measures which he de-  
 mined to take, was obliged to insist for full  
 faction with regard to every thing that either  
 crown of France or his mother Louise could  
 and of the house of Savoy\*. Such an evasive

*Histoire Genealogique de Savoye, par Guichenon,  
 Lyon. 1660. i. 639, &c.*

answer, as might have been expected, being made to this requisition, the French army under the admiral Biron poured at once into the duke's territories at different places. The countries of Bresse and Bugey, united at that time to Savoy, were over-run in a moment. Most of the towns in the dutchy of Savoy opened their gates at the approach of the enemy ; a few which attempted to make resistance were easily taken ; and before the end of the campaign the duke saw himself stripped of all his dominions, but the province of Piedmont, in which there were not many places in a condition to be defended.

To complete the duke's misfortunes, the city of Geneva, the sovereignty of which he claimed, and in some degree possessed, threw off his yoke, and its revolt drew along with it the loss of the adjacent territories. Geneva was, at that time, an Imperial city, and though under the direct dominion of its own bishops, and the remote sovereignty of the dukes of Savoy, the form of its internal constitution was purely republican, being governed by syndics and a council chosen by the citizens. From these distinct and often clashing jurisdictions, two opposite parties took their rise, and had long subsisted in the state ; the one, composed of the advocates for the privileges of the community, assumed the name of *Eignots*, or confederates in defence of liberty ; and branded the other, which supported the episcopal or ducal prerogatives, with the name of *Mammelukes*, or slaves. At length [1532], the protestant opinions beginning to spread among the citizens, inspired such as embraced them with that bold enterpris-

ally produced by them in their first operations. As both the duke and bishop were from rest, from prejudice, and from political considerations, violent enemies of the reformation, the new converts joined with warmth the party of the Eignotz ; and zeal for religion, mingled with the love of liberty, added strength to that generous passion. The rage and animosity of the factions, shut up within the same walls, occasioned frequent insurrections, which terminated mostly to the advantage of the friends of liberty, they daily became more powerful. The duke and bishop, forgetting their ancient contests about jurisdiction, had united against their common enemies, and each attacked them with his proper weapons. The bishop excommunicated the people of Geneva as guilty of a heinous crime ; of impiety, in apostatising from the established religion ; and of sacrilege, in invading the rights of his see. The duke attacked them as rebels against their lawful prince, and attempted to render himself master of the city, first by surprise, and then by open force [1534]. The citizens, despising the thunder of the bishop's censures, boldly asserted their independence against the duke ; and partly by their own valor, partly by the powerful assistance which they received from the canton of Berne, together with the small supplies both of men and money, secretly furnished by the king of France, they defeated all his attempts. Not satisfied with having vanquished him, or with remaining always upon the offensive themselves, they now took advantage of the duke's inability to resist them, while overpowered by the armies of France, and seized

several castles and places of strength which he possessed in the neighbourhood of Geneva; thus delivering the city from those odious monuments of its former subjection, and rendering the public liberty more secure for the future. At the same time the canton of Berne invaded and conquered the Pays de Vaud, to which it had some pretensions. The canton of Eriburgh, though zealously attached to the catholic religion, and having no subject of contest with the duke, laid hold on part of the spoils of that unfortunate prince. A great portion of these conquests or usurpations being still retained by the two cantons, add considerably to their power, and have become the most valuable part of their territories. Geneva, notwithstanding many schemes and enterprizes of the dukes of Savoy to re-establish their dominion over it, it still keeps possession of its independence; and in consequence of that blessing, has attained a degree of consideration, wealth, and elegance, which it could not otherwise have reached<sup>f</sup>.

Amidst such a succession of disastrous events, the duke of Savoy had no other resource but the emperor's protection, which, upon his return from Tunis, he demanded with the most earnest importunity; and as his misfortunes were occasioned chiefly by his attachment to the Imperial interest, he had a just title to immediate assistance. Charles, however, was not in a condition to support him with that vigour and dispatch which the exigency of his affairs called for. Most of the

<sup>f</sup> *Hist. de la Ville de Geneve*, par Spon, 12<sup>o</sup>, Utr. 1685. p. 99. *Hist. de la Reformation de Suisse*, par Rouchat. Gen. 1728. tom. iv. p. 294, &c. tom. v. p. 216, &c. *Mém. de Bellay*. 181.

employed in the African expedition, been raised for that service alone, were sent as soon as it was finished; the veteran under Antonio de Leyva were hardly sufficient for the defence of the Milanese; and the emperor's treasury was entirely drained by his ordinary efforts against the Infidels.

The death of Francis Sforza [Oct. 24], preceded, according to some historians, by the news of a French invasion, which had twice been repulsed from his family, afforded the emperor full leisure to prepare for action. By this unexpected change in the nature of the war, and the causes of it, were totally changed. Francis's first motive for taking arms, in order to chastise the duke of Milan for the insult offered to the dignity of his own house, was at once cut off; but as that duke died without issue, all Francis's rights to the sovereignty of Milan, which he had yielded only to Charles V. and his posterity, returned back to him in full force. As the recovery of the Milanese was the favourite object of that monarch, he immediately renewed his claim to it; and if he had supported his pretensions by ordering the powerful army quartered in Savoy to advance without delay towards Milan, he could hardly have failed to secure the important point of possession.

But Francis, who became less enterprising as he advanced in years, and who was overruled some times into an excess of caution by the remembrance of his past misfortunes, endeavoured to establish his rights by negotiation, notwithstanding; and from a timid moderation, fatal in such affairs, neglected to improve the favourable opportunity which presented itself. Charles

was more decisive in his operations, and in the capacity of sovereign, took possession of the dukedom as a vacant fief of the empire. While he endeavoured to explain and assert his title by arguments and memorials, or employed various arts in order to reconcile the Italian powers to the thoughts of his regaining footing in Italy, his rival was silently taking effectual steps to prevent it. The emperor, however, was very careful not to discover too early an intention of this kind; but seeming to admit the equity of Francis's claim, he appeared solicitous only in giving him possession in such a manner as would not disturb the peace of Europe, or overturn the balance of power in Italy, which the politicians of that country were so desirous of preserving. By this artifice he deceived Francis and gained so much confidence with the Emperor of Europe, that, almost without incurring suspicion, he involved the affair in new difficulties.

sembled the states both of Sicily and Nand, as they thought themselves greatly ed by the presence of their sovereign, and o less pleased with the apparent disinte- ess of his expedition into Africa, than d by the success which had attended his he prevailed on them to vote him such li- absidies as were seldom granted in that age. nabled him to recruit his veteran troops, a body of Germans, and to take every proper precaution for executing or sup- the measures on which he had deter-

Bellay, the French envoy in Germany, discovered the intention of raising troops country, notwithstanding all the pretexts ed in order to conceal it, first alarmed his with this evident proof of the emperor's rity. But Francis was so possessed at me with the rage of negotiation, in all the s and refinements of which his rival far ed him, that instead of beginning his mi- operations, and pushing them with vigour, ing the Milanese before the Imperial army lembled, he satisfied himself with making ffers to the emperor, in order to procure vestiture by his voluntary deed. His of- ere, indeed, so liberal and advantageous, ever Charles had intended to grant his d, he could not have rejected them with y. He dexterously eluded them by de- g that until he consulted the pope in per- e could not take his final resolution with to a point which so nearly concerned the



peace of Italy. By this evasion he gained some farther time for ripening the schemes which he had in view.

The emperor at last advanced towards Rome, and made his public entry into that city with extraordinary pomp [April 6] ; but it being found necessary to remove the ruins of an ancient temple of Peace, in order to widen one of the streets, through which the cavalcade had to pass, all the historians take notice of this trivial circumstance, and they are fond to interpret it as an omen of the bloody war that followed. Charles, it is certain, had by this time banished all thoughts of peace ; and at last threw off the mask, with which he had so long covered his designs from the court of France, by a declaration of his sentiments no less singular than explicit. The French ambassadors having in their master's name demanded a definitive reply to his propositions concerning the investiture of Milan, Charles promised to give it next day in presence of the pope and cardinals assembled in full consistory. These being accordingly met, and all the foreign ambassadors invited to attend, the emperor stood up, and addressing himself to the pope, expatiated for some time on the sincerity of his own wishes for the peace of Christendom, as well as his abhorrence of war, the miseries of which he enumerated at great length, with studied and elaborate oratory ; he complained that all his endeavours to preserve the tranquillity of Europe had hitherto been defeated by the restless and *unjust ambition* of the French king ; that even *during his minority* he had proofs of the *unfriendly and hostile intentions* of that monarch ;

fterwards, he had openly attempted to  
 rom him the Imperial crown which be-  
 to him by a title no less juſt than natu-  
 at he had next invaded his kingdom of  
 e; that not ſatisfied with this, he had at-  
 his territories, as well as thoſe of his allies,

Italy and the Low Countries; that when  
 our of the Imperial troops, rendered irre-  
 by the protection of the Almighty, had  
 l his progreſs, ruined his armies, and  
 his perſon, he continued to purſue by  
 what he had undertaken with injuſtice;  
 : had violated every article in the treaty  
 rld to which he owed his liberty, and as  
 he returned to his dominions took mea-  
 r rekindling the war which that pacifica-  
 d happily extinguished; that when new  
 nes compelled him to ſue again for peace  
 bray, he concluded and obſerved it with  
 ſincerity; that ſoon after he had formed  
 us connexions with the heretical princes  
 many, and incited them to diſturb the  
 lity of the empire; that now he had  
 he duke of Savoy, a prince married to a  
 the empreſs, and joined in cloſe alliance  
 ain, out of the greater part of his terri-  
 that after injuries ſo often repeated, and  
 ſo many ſources of diſcord, all hope of  
 r concord became deſperate; and though  
 elf was ſtill willing to grant the inveſtiture  
 to one of the princes of France, there  
 e probability of that event taking place,  
 is, on the one hand, would not conſent to  
 neceſſary for ſecuring the tranquillit-  
 ; nor on the other, could he think

reasonable or safe to give a rival the unconquered possession of all that he demanded. "not, however," added he, "continue washed the blood of our innocent subjects; decide the quarrel man to man, with whom he pleases to choose, in our shirts, on a bridge, or aboard a galley moored in the straits; let the dutchy of Burgundy be put in dispute, his part, and that of Milan on mine; the victory shall be the prize of the conqueror; and afterwards let the united forces of Germany, Spain, and France be employed to humble the power of the Turk, and to extirpate heresy out of Christendom. But if he, by declining this method of terminating our differences, renders war inevitable, nothing shall divert me from prosecuting to such extremity, as shall reduce one of the poorest gentlemen in his own dominions to poverty. Nor do I fear that it will be on me that the worst fortune shall fall; I enter upon action a

each ambassadors, who did not fully comprehend his meaning, as he spake in the Spanish were totally disconcerted, and at a loss how they should answer such an unexpected insult. When one of them began to vindicate the emperor's conduct, Charles interposed abruptly and would not permit him to proceed. He, without entering into any particulars, satisfied himself with a short but passionate commendation of peace, together with the wisdom of employing his sincere endeavours to procure that blessing to Christendom; the assembly broke up in the greatest astonishment at the extraordinary scene which had exhibited. In no part of his conduct, indeed Charles ever deviate so widely from his usual character. Instead of that prudent and composed deportment, that composed and regular deportment, strictly attentive to decorum, and so adapted to conceal his own passions, for which he was at all other times conspicuous, he now on this occasion before one of the most splendid assemblies in Europe, boasting of his own exploits with insolence; inveighing against his enemy with indecency; and challenging to combat with an ostentatious valour, far from being a champion in romance, than the champion in Christendom. But the well known and powerful operation of continued prosperity, as well as of exaggerated praise, even on the firmest minds, sufficiently account for this inconsistency. After having compelled the emperor to retreat, and having stripped him of a kingdom, Charles began to confide

his arms as invincible. He had been entertained, ever since his return from Africa, with repeated scenes of triumphs and public rejoicings; the orators and poets of Italy, the most elegant at that time in Europe, had exhausted their genius in panegyric on his conduct and merit, to which the astrologers added magnificent promises of a more splendid fortune still in store. Intoxicated with all these, he forgot his usual reserve and moderation, and was unable to restrain this extravagant folly of vanity, which became the more remarkable, by being both so uncommon and so public.

He himself seems to have been immediately sensible of the impropriety of his behaviour; and when the French ambassadors demanded next day a more clear explanation of what he had said concerning the combat, he told them that they were not to consider his proposal as a formal challenge to their master, but as an expedient for preventing bloodshed; he endeavoured to soften several expressions in his discourse; and spoke in terms full of respect towards Francis. But though this slight apology was far from being sufficient to remove the offence which had been given, Francis, by an unaccountable infatuation, continued to negotiate, as if it had still been possible to bring their differences to a period by an amicable composition. Charles, finding him so eager to run into the snare, favoured the deception, and, by seeming to listen to his proposals, gained farther time to prepare for the execution of his own designs<sup>1</sup>.

At last, the Imperial army assembled on the  
 tiers of the Milanese, to the amount of forty  
 thousand foot and ten thousand horse, while that  
 France encamped near Vercelli in Piedmont,  
 greatly inferior in number, and weakened  
 by the departure of a body of Swiss, whom  
 the duke artfully persuaded the popish cantons to  
 refuse, that they might not serve against the duke  
 of Savoy, their ancient ally. The French general  
 daring to risque a battle, retired as soon as  
 the Imperialists advanced. The emperor put  
 himself at the head of his forces [May 6], which  
 the marquis del Guasto, the duke of Alva, and  
 Ferdinand de Gonzaga commanded under him,  
 though the supreme direction of the whole was  
 committed to Antonio de Leyva, whose abilities  
 and experience justly entitled him to that distinc-

Charles soon discovered his intention not  
 to confine his operations to the recovery of Pied-  
 mont and Savoy, but to push forward and invade  
 the southern provinces of France. This scheme  
 he had long meditated, and had long been taking  
 measures for executing it with such vigour as  
 to ensure success. He had remitted large

sums to his sister, the governess of the Low-  
 countries, and to his brother, the king of the  
 Romans, instructing them to levy all the forces  
 at their power, in order to form two separate  
 armies, the one to enter France on the side of  
 Normandy, the other on the side of Champagne ;  
 while he, with the main army, fell upon the op-  
 en frontier of the kingdom. Trusting to  
 his vast preparations, he thought it impossible  
 that Francis could resist so many unexpected at-  
 tacks on such different quarters ; and began his  
 enterpri-

enterprise with such confidence of its happy issue, that he desired Jovius the historian, to make a large provision of paper sufficient to record his victories which he was going to obtain.

His ministers and generals, instead of entertaining the same sanguine hopes, represented to him in the strongest terms the danger of leading his troops so far from his own territory to such a distance from his magazines, and the provinces which did not yield sufficient subsistence for their own inhabitants. They entreated him to consider the inexhaustible resources of France in maintaining a defensive war, and the ardour with which a gallant nobility would follow a prince whom they loved, in repelling the enemy of their country; they recalled to his remembrance the fatal miscarriage of Bourbon and Condé, when they ventured upon the same enterprise under circumstances which seemed as certainly to promise success; the marquis del Guiscard in particular fell on his knees, and conjured him to abandon the undertaking as desperate. But many circumstances combined in leading Charles to disregard all their remonstrances. He could seldom be brought, on any occasion, to depart from a resolution which he had once taken.

of any part of Piedmont, except such towns were absolutely necessary for preserving his communication with the Milanese.

The marquis de Saluces, to whom Francis had entrusted the command of a small body of troops for the defence of Piedmont, rendered this so easy than Charles had any reason to expect. A nobleman, educated in the court of France, distinguished by continual marks of the king's favour, and honoured so lately with a charge of great importance, suddenly, and without any provocation or pretext of disgust, revolted from his benefactor. His motives to this treacherous action were as childish as the deed itself was base. Being strongly possessed with a superstitious faith in divination and astrology, he believed with assurance, that the fatal period of the French monarchy was at hand; that on its ruins the emperor would establish an universal monarchy; that therefore he ought to follow the dictates of prudence, in attaching himself to his rising fortune, and could incur no blame for deserting a prince whom heaven had devoted to destruction<sup>k</sup>. His action became still more odious, by his employing that very authority, with which Francis had entrusted him, in order to open the kingdom to his enemies. Whatever measures were proposed and undertaken by the officers under his command for the defence of their conquests, he rejected or frustrated. Whatever properly belonged to him, as commander in chief, to provide or provide for that purpose, he totally neglected. In



this manner, he rendered towns even of greatest consequence, untenable, by leaving destitute either of provisions, or ammunition, artillery, or a sufficient garrison; and the perialists must have reduced Piedmont in as a time as was necessary to march through Montpezat, the governor of Fossano, had by an extraordinary effort of courage and conduct, detained them almost a month in that inconsiderable place.

By this meritorious and seasonable service gained his master sufficient time for assembling his forces, and for concerting a system of defence against a danger which he now saw to be inevitable. Francis fixed upon the only proper effectual plan for defeating the invasion of his powerful enemy; and his prudence in choosing this plan, as well as his perseverance in executing it, deserve the greater praise, as it was contrary to his own natural temper, and the genius of the French nation. He determined to remain altogether upon the defensive; not to hazard a battle, or even a great skirmish without certainty of success; to fortify his camp in a regular manner; to throw garrisons on the most important towns of great strength; to deprive the enemy of subsistence, by laying waste the country before them; and to save the whole kingdom, by sacrificing one of its provinces. The execution of this plan he committed entirely to the marquis of Montmorency, who was the author of it; wonderfully fitted by nature for such a task. *Haughty, severe, confident in his own abilities, and despising those of other men; incapable*

diverted from any resolution by remon-  
ces or entreaties ; and, in prosecuting any  
e, regardless alike of love or of pity.

ntmorency made choice of a strong camp  
the walls of Avignon, at the confluence of  
hone and the Durance, one of which plen-

supplied his troops with all necessaries  
the inland provinces, and the other covered  
mp on that side where it was most probable  
emy would approach. He laboured with

ried industry to render the fortifications of  
camp impregnable, and assembled there a  
erable army, though greatly inferior to that  
enemy ; while the king with another body

ops encamped at Valence higher up the  
r. Marseilles and Arles were the only

he thought it necessary to defend ; the  
r, in order to retain the command of the

he latter, as the barrier of the province of  
iedoc ; and each of these he furnished with

ous garisons of his best troops, commanded  
icers on whose fidelity and valour he could

The inhabitants of the other towns, as  
s of the open country, were compelled to

on their houses, and were conducted to  
ountains, to the camp at Avignon, or to

land provinces. The fortifications of such  
as might have afforded shelter or defence to

emy, were thrown down. Corn, forage, and  
ons of every kind, were carried away or

yed ; all the mills and ovens were ruined,  
e wells filled up or rendered useless. The

ation extended from the Alps to Marseilles,  
on the sea to the confines of Dauphiné :

s history afford any instance among civi-  
liz

lized nations, in which this cruel  
the public safety was employed w  
rigour.

At length, the emperor arrived  
of his army on the frontiers of F  
was still so possessed with confidence  
that, during a few days when he v  
halt until the rest of his troops  
began to divide his future conquest  
officers ; and, as a new incitement  
with zeal, gave them liberal prom  
lands, and honours in France<sup>1</sup>.  
desolation, however, which prese  
him, when he entered the count  
damp his hopes, and convinced hi  
narch, who, in order to distress a  
voluntarily ruined one of his rich  
would defend the rest with desper  
Nor was it long before he became  
Francis's plan of defence was as

lift his forces ; for though he was now in position of almost an entire province, he could not said to have the command of it, while he held y defenceless towns ; and while the French, ~~ides~~ their camp, at Avignon, continued masters ~~Marseilles~~ and Arles. At first he thought of ~~acking~~ the camp, and of terminating the war one decisive blow ; but skilful officers, who re appointed to view it, declared the attempt be utterly impracticable. He then gave orders invest ~~Marseilles~~ and Arles, hoping that the ~~nch~~ would quit their advantageous post in ~~er~~ to relieve them ; but Montmorency ad- ~~ing~~ firmly to his plan, remained immoveable Avignon, and the Imperialists met with such ~~arm~~ reception from the garrisons of both ~~ms~~, that they relinquished their enterprises h loss and disgrace. As a last effort, the ~~xeror~~ advanced once more towards Avignon, ~~ugh~~ with an army harassed by the perpetual ~~ursions~~ of small parties of the French light ~~ops~~, weakened by diseases, and dispirited by ~~fiets~~, which seemed the more intolerable, be- ~~se~~ they were unexpected.

During these operations, Montmorency found self exposed to greater danger from his own ~~ops~~ than from the enemy ; and their incon- ~~rate~~ valour went near to have precipitated the ~~gdom~~ into those calamities which he with such ~~istry~~ and caution had endeavoured to avoid. accustomed to behold an enemy ravaging their ~~try~~ *almost without controul ; impatient of long inaction ; unacquainted with the slow ~~mote~~, but certain effects of Montmoren ~~stem~~ of defence ; the French wished for*

M 2

bat

battle with no less ardour than the  
They considered the conduct of their  
a disgrace to their country. His conduct  
imputed to timidity ; his circumspect  
of spirit ; and the constancy with which  
sued his plan, to obstinacy or pride.  
suggestions, whispered at first among  
and subalterns, were adopted, by  
officers of higher rank ; and as many  
envied Montmorency's favour with the king,  
more were dissatisfied with his harsh  
manner, the discontent soon became  
camp, which was filled with general  
and almost open complaints against him.  
Montmorency, on whom the sentinels  
own troops made as little impression as  
of the enemy, adhered steadily to his  
though, in order to reconcile the  
maxims, no less contrary to the  
the nation, than to the ideas of  
undisciplined troops, he assumed  
affability in his deportment, and offered  
ed, with great condescension, the  
his conduct, the advantages which  
resulted from it, and the certain success  
which it would be attended. At the

and soldiers, would at last have over-ruled Montmorency's salutary caution<sup>a</sup>.

Happily the retreat of the enemy delivered the kingdom from the danger which any rash resolution might have occasioned. The emperor, after spending two inglorious months in Provence, without having performed any thing suitable to his vast preparations, or that could justify the confidence with which he had boasted of his own power, found that, besides Antonio de Leyva, and other officers of distinction, he had lost one half of his troops by diseases or by famine; and that the rest were in no condition to struggle any longer with calamities, by which so many of their companions had perished. Necessity, therefore, extorted from him orders to retire; and though he was some time in motion before the French suspected his intention, a body of light troops, assisted by crowds of peasants, eager to be revenged on those who had brought such desolation on their country, hung upon the rear of the Imperialists, and by seizing every favourable opportunity of attacking them, threw them often into confusion. The road by which they fled, for they pursued their march with such disorder and precipitation that it scarcely deserves the name of a retreat, was strewed with arms or baggage, which in their hurry and trepidation they had abandoned, and covered with the sick, the wounded, and the dead; insomuch that Martin Bellay, an eye-witness of their calamities, endeavours to give his readers some idea of them, by *comparing their miseries to those which the Jews*

<sup>a</sup> *Mém. de Bellay*, 269, &c. 312, &c.

suffered from the victorious and destructive of the Romans<sup>o</sup>. If Montmorency, at this critical moment, had advanced with all his force, nothing could have saved the whole Imperial army from utter ruin. But that general, by standing so long and so obstinately on the defensive, became cautious to excess; his mind, tenacious of any bent it had once taken, could not admit of a contrary one as suddenly as the change of circumstances required; and he still continued to repeat his favourite maxims, that it was more prudent to allow the lion to escape, than to force him to despair, and that a bridge of gold should be made for a retreating enemy.

The emperor having conducted the shattered remains of his troops to the frontiers of Italy, and appointed the marquis del Guasto to succeed Leyva in the government of that dukedom, set out for Genoa. As he could not be exposed himself to the scorn of the Italians, after such a sad reverse of fortune; and did not choose, under his present circumstances, to revisit the cities through which he had so lately passed in triumph for one conquest, and in certain expectation of another, he embarked directly for Spain<sup>p</sup> [November].

Nor was the progress of his arms on the opposite frontier of France such as to alleviate, in any degree, the losses which he had sustained in Provence. Bellay, by his address and intrigues, had prevailed on so many of the German princes to withdraw the contingent of troops which

<sup>o</sup> *Mem. de Bellay*, 316. Sandov. *Hist. del Emperador*  
<sup>p</sup> *vii Hist. lib. xxxv. p. 174. &c.*

had furnished to the king of the Romans, that he was obliged to lay aside all thoughts of his intended irruption into Champagne. Though a powerful army levied in the Low-Countries entered Picardy, which they found but feebly guarded, while the strength of the kingdom was drawn towards the south; yet the nobility, taking arms with their usual alacrity, supplied by their spirit the defects of the king's preparations, and defended Peronne, and other towns which were attacked with such vigour, as obliged the enemy to retire, without making any conquest of importance<sup>9</sup>.

Thus Francis, by the prudence of his own measures, and by the union and valour of his subjects, rendered abortive those vast efforts in which his rival had almost exhausted his whole force. As this humbled the emperor's arrogance no less than it checked his power, he was mortified more sensibly on this occasion than on any other, during the course of the long contests between him and the French monarch.

One circumstance alone embittered the joy with which the success of the campaign inspired Francis. That was the death of the Dauphin, his eldest son, a prince of great hopes, and extremely beloved by the people on account of his resemblance to his father. This happening suddenly, was imputed to poison, not only by the vulgar, fond of ascribing the death of illustrious personages to extraordinary causes, but by the king and his ministers. The count de Montecu-

<sup>9</sup> *Mem. de Bellay, 318, &c.*



culi, an Italian nobleman, cupbearer to the Dauphin, being seized on suspicion and put to the torture, openly charged the Imperial generals, Gonzaga and Leyva, with having instigated him to the commission of that crime; he even threw out some indirect and obscure accusations against the emperor himself. At a time when all France was exasperated to the utmost against Charles, this uncertain and extorted charge was considered as an incontestible proof of guilt; while the confidence with which both he and his officers asserted their own innocence, together with the indignation, as well as horror, which they expressed on their being supposed capable of such a detestable action, were little attended to, and less regarded. It is evident, however, that the emperor could have no inducement to perpetrate such a crime, as Francis was still in the vigour of life himself, and had two sons, besides the Dauphin, grown up almost to the age of manhood. That single consideration, without mentioning the emperor's general character, unblemished by the imputation of any deed resembling this in atrocity, is more than sufficient to counterbalance the weight of a dubious testimony uttered during the anguish of torture. According to the most unprejudiced historians, the Dauphin's death was occasioned by his having drunk too freely of cold water after over-heating himself at tennis; and this account, as it is the most simple, is likewise the most credible. But if his days were cut short by poison, it is not improbable that the emperor

<sup>r</sup> *Mem. de Bellay*, 283.

<sup>r</sup> *Sandoz Hist. del Emper.* li. 211.

ected rightly, when he affirmed that it had  
administered by the direction of Catherine  
Medici, in order to secure the crown to the  
of Orleans, her husband<sup>t</sup>. The advantages  
king to her by the Dauphin's death were  
ous as well as great; nor did her boundless  
daring ambition ever recoil from any action  
fary towards attaining the objects which she  
in view.

537.] Next year opened with a transaction  
uncommon, but so incapable of producing  
effect, that it would not deserve to be men-  
ed, if it were not a striking proof of the per-  
l animosity which mingled itself in all the  
ilities between Charles and Francis, and  
h often betrayed them into such indecencies  
rds each other, as lessened the dignity of  
Francis, accompanied by the peers and  
ces of the blood, having taken his seat in  
parliament of Paris with the usual solemnity  
the advocate-general appeared; and after  
sing Charles of Austria (for so he affected to  
the emperor) of having violated the treaty of  
bray, by which he was absolved from the  
age due to the crown of France for the coun-  
of Artois and Flanders; insisted that this  
ty being now void, he was still to be confi-  
d as a vassal of the crown, and by consequence  
been guilty of rebellion in taking arms against  
sovereign; and therefore he demanded that  
rles should be summoned to appear in person,  
y his counsel, before the parliament of Paris,  
egal judges, to answer for this crime. The

<sup>t</sup> Vera y Zuniga Vida de Carlo V. p. 75.

request was granted; a herald repaired to the frontiers of Picardy, and summoned the accustomed formalities to appear as prescribed. That term being expired, Francis appearing in his name, the parliament pronounced judgment, "That Charles of Austria, by rebellion and contumacy, those fiefs of Flanders and Artois to be re-united to France!" and ordered their decree of purpose to be published by sound of trumpet at the frontiers of these provinces<sup>a</sup>.

Soon after this vain display of his power, Francis marched into the Low-Countries [March], as if he intended to execute the sentence which his parliament had pronounced, and to seize those territories which he had awarded to him. As the queen, Mary, to whom her brother the emperor had committed the government of that dominion, was not prepared for a campaign, he at first made some progress, and took several towns of importance. He was then obliged soon to leave his army, in order to attend the other operations of war, though he had assembled a numerous army, and recovered most of the places which the emperor had but begun to make conquests in. He then returned, and last they invested Terouenne, and then Orleans, now Dauphin, by the death of his brother, and Montmorency, whom the emperor had honoured with the constable's sword, in reward of his great services during the

<sup>a</sup> *Lettres et Memoires d'Etat, par Ribier*  
tom. i. p. x.

determined to hazard a battle in order to it. While they were advancing for this, and within a few miles of the enemy, were stopt short by the arrival of an herald from the queen of Hungary, acquainting him that a suspension of arms was now agreed upon.

This unexpected event was owing to the zealous labours of the two sisters, the queens of France and of Hungary, who had long laboured to reconcile the contending monarchs. The war in the Netherlands had laid waste the frontier provinces of both countries, without any real advantage to either. The French and Flemings regretted the interruption of their commerce, which was beneficial to both. Charles and Francis, who had each strained to the utmost

in order to support the vast operations of their former campaign, found that they could not keep armies on foot in this quarter, without weakening their operations in Piedmont, both wished to push the war with the utmost vigour. All these circumstances facilitated the negotiations of the two queens; a truce was concluded [July 30], to continue in force for ten months, but it extended no farther than the Low-Countries\*.

In Piedmont the war was still prosecuted with animosity; and though neither Charles nor Francis could make the powerful efforts to which animosity prompted them, they continued to behave themselves like combatants, whose remains after their strength is exhausted. The towns were alternately lost and retaken; skir-

\* *Memoires de Rilier*, 56.

milhes were fought every day; and much was shed, without any action that gave superiority to either side. At last the determining not to leave unfinished work which they had begun, prevailed; importunate solicitations, the one on her the other on her husband, to consent to a truce in Piedmont for three months. The conditions of it were, that each should keep of what was in his hands, and after lessening the garrisons in the towns, should withdraw out of the province; and that plenipotenentiaries should be appointed to adjust all matters to be put by a final treaty.

The powerful motives which inclined the princes to this accommodation, have been mentioned. The expences of the war exceeded the sums which their revenue was capable of supplying; nor durst they venture upon any great addition to the imposi-

always declared to be suitable to his character, but passionately desirous of bringing about a peace. He perceived that the latter were still attached to their ancient object of holding the balance even between the rivals, and solicitous to throw too great a weight into either

That made a deeper impression on Charles was all these, was the dread of the Turkish power, which, by his league with Solymán, Francis had drawn upon him. Though Francis, without the assistance of a single ally, had a war to sustain against an enemy greatly superior in power to himself, yet so great was the horror of infidels, in that age, at any union with Infidels, which they considered not only as dishonourable but profane, that it was long before he could be brought to avail himself of the obvious advantages resulting from such a confederacy. At last necessity at last surmounted his delicacy and scruples. Towards the close of the preceding year, La Forest, a secret agent at the Ottoman court, had concluded a treaty with the sultan, whereby Solymán engaged to invade the kingdom of Naples, during the next campaign, and to attack the king of the Romans in Hungary with a powerful army, while Francis undertook to engage the Milanese at the same time with a proper force. Solymán had punctually performed what was incumbent on him. Barbarossa with a great fleet appeared on the coast of Naples, filled that kingdom, from which all the troops had been withdrawn towards Piedmont, with consternation, and without resistance near Taranto, obliged the

Castro, a place of some strength, to surrender, plundered the adjacent country, and was taking measures for securing and extending his conquests, when the unexpected arrival of Doria, together with the pope's galleys, and a squadron of the Venetian fleet, made it prudent for him to retire. In Hungary the progress of the Turks was more formidable. Mahmet, their general, after gaining several small advantages, defeated the Germans in a great battle at Essek on the Drave<sup>a</sup>. Happily for Christendom, it was not in Francis's power to execute with equal exactness what he had stipulated; nor could he assemble at this juncture an army strong enough to penetrate into the Milanese. By this he failed in recovering possession of that duchy; and Italy was not only saved from the calamities of a new war, but from feeling the desolating rage of the Turkish arms, as an addition to all that it had suffered<sup>b</sup>. As the emperor knew that he could not long resist the efforts of two such powerful confederates, nor could expect that the same fortunate accidents would concur a second time to deliver Naples, and to preserve the Milanese; as he foresaw that the Italian states would not only tax him loudly with insatiable ambition, but might even turn their arms against him, if he should be so regardless of their danger as obstinately to protract the war, he thought it necessary, both for his safety and reputation, to give his consent to a truce. Nor was Francis

<sup>a</sup> *Istuanheffi Hist. Hung. lib. xiii. p. 139.*

<sup>b</sup> *Jovii Hist. lib. xxxv. p. 183.*

ing to sustain all the blame of obstructing the establishment of tranquillity, or to expose him-  
on that account to the danger of being de-  
ed by the Swiss and other foreigners in his  
ice. He even began to apprehend that his  
subjects would serve him coldly, if by con-  
uting to aggrandize the power of the Infidels,  
ch it was his duty, and had been the ambi-  
of his ancestors to depress, he continued to  
in direct opposition to all the principles which  
ht to influence a monarch distinguished by  
title of Most Christian King. He chose, for  
these reasons, rather to run the risk of dis-  
ging his new ally the sultan, than, by an  
asonable adherence to the treaty with him,  
orfeit what was of greater consequence.

but though both parties consented to a truce,  
plenipotentiaries found insuperable difficulties  
settling the articles of a definitive treaty.  
h of the monarchs, with the arrogance of a  
queror, aimed at giving law to the other;  
neither would so far acknowledge his infe-  
ity, as to sacrifice any point of honour, or to  
quish any matter of right; so that the pleni-  
ntiaries spent the time in long and fruitless  
otiations, and separated after agreeing to  
ong the truce for a few months.

538.] The pope, however, did not despair  
accomplishing a point in which the pleni-  
iaries had failed, and took upon himself the  
burden of negotiating a peace. To form a  
ederacy capable of defending Christendom  
the formidable inroads of the Turkish arms,  
concert effectual measures for the extirpa-  
the Lutheran heresy, were two great ob-



jects which Paul had much at heart, and he considered the union of the emperor with the king of France as an essential preliminary to both. To be the instrument of reconciling these contending monarchs, whom his predecessors by their interested and indecent intrigues had so often embroiled, was a circumstance which could not fail of throwing a distinguished lustre on his character and administration. Nor was he without hopes that, while he pursued this laudable end, he might secure advantages to his own family, the aggrandizing of which he did not neglect, though he aimed at it with a less audacious ambition than was common among the popes of the century. Influenced by these considerations,

of either monarch in asserting his own

At last, that he might not seem to  
sured altogether without effect, he pre-  
n them to sign a truce for ten years  
8], upon the same condition with the  
that each should retain what was now in  
sion, and in the mean time should send  
ors to Rome, to discuss their pretensions  
c.

ended a war of no long continuance, but  
ensive in its operations, and in which  
arties exerted their utmost strength.

Francis failed in the object which he  
cipally in view, the recovery of the Mi-  
e acquired, nevertheless, great reputation  
isdom of his measures as well as the suc-  
is arms in repelling a formidable invasion ;  
eeping possession of one half of the duke  
's dominions, he added no inconsiderable  
of strength to his kingdom. Whereas  
repulsed and baffled, after having boasted  
antly of victory, purchased an inglorious  
y sacrificing an ally who had rashly con-  
much in his friendship and power. The  
ate duke murmured, complained, and  
ated against a treaty so much to his

hours, between whom they happen situated, are crushed and overwhelmed shock.

A few days after signing the treaty the emperor set sail for Barcelona, but was by contrary winds to the island of St. M. on the coast of Provence. When Francis happened to be not far distant, heard of considered it as an office of civility to invite to take shelter in his dominions, and proposed a personal interview with him at Aigues. The emperor, who would not be outdone rival in complaisance, instantly repaired. As soon as he cast anchor in the road, without waiting to settle any point of ceremony but relying implicitly on the emperor's word for his security, visited him on board his ship and was received and entertained with the most elegant demonstrations of esteem and affection. The day the emperor repaid the confidence which the king had placed in him. He landed at Marseilles with as little precaution, and met with a reception equally cordial. He remained on shore during the night, and in both visits the two monarchs vied with each other in expressions of respect and friendship<sup>d</sup>. After twenty years of open hostilities, or of secret enmity; after

<sup>d</sup> Sandov. Hist. vol. ii. 238. Relation de l'Empereur Charles V. & Francis I. par M. de la Riviere. Hist. de France par D. D. De Vic. & Vaissette, tom. v. Preuve

many injuries reciprocally inflicted or endured; after having formally given the lie, and challenged one another to single combat; after the emperor had inveighed so publicly against Francis as a prince void of honour or integrity; and after Francis had accused him of being accessory to the murder of his eldest son; such an interview appears altogether singular and even unnatural. But the history of these monarchs abounds with such surprising transitions. From implacable hatred they appeared to pass, in a moment, to the most cordial reconciliation; from suspicion and distrust, to perfect confidence; and from practising all the dark arts of a deceitful policy, they could assume, of a sudden, the liberal and open manners of two gallant gentlemen.

The pope, besides the glory of having restored peace to Europe, gained, according to his expectation, a point of great consequence to his family, by prevailing on the emperor to betroth Margaret of Austria, his natural daughter, formerly the wife of Alexander di Medici, to his grandson Octavio Farnese, and in consideration of this marriage, to bestow several honours and territories upon his future son-in-law. A very tragical event, which happened about the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and thirty-seven, had deprived Margaret of her first husband. That young prince, whom the emperor's partiality had raised to the supreme power in Florence, upon the ruins of the public liberty, neglected entirely the cares of government, and abandoned himself to the most dissolute debauchery. Lorenzo di Medici his nearest kind

m

man was not only the companion but director of his pleasures, and employing all the powers of a cultivated and inventive genius in this dishonourable ministry, added such elegance as well as variety to vice, as gained him an absolute ascendant over the mind of Alexander. But while Lorenzo seemed to be sunk in luxury, and affected such an appearance of indolence and effeminacy, that he would not wear a sword, and trembled at the sight of blood, he concealed under that disguise a dark, designing, audacious spirit. Prompted either by the love of liberty, or allured by the hope of attaining the supreme power, he determined to assassinate Alexander his benefactor and friend. Though he long revolved this design in his mind, his reserved and suspicious temper prevented him from communicating it to any person whatever; and continuing to live with Alexander in their usual familiarity, he, one night, under pretence of having secured him an assignation with a lady of high rank whom he had often solicited, drew that unwary prince into a secret apartment of his house, and there stabbed him, while he lay carelessly on a couch expecting the arrival of the lady whose company he had been promised. But no sooner was the deed done, than standing astonished, and struck with horror at its atrocity, he forgot, in a moment, all the motives which had induced him to commit it. Instead of rousing the people to recover their liberty by publishing the death of the tyrant, instead of taking any step towards opening his own way to the dignity now vacant, *he locked the door of the apartment, and, like a man bereaved of reason and presence of mind*

with the utmost precipitation out of the nine territories. It was late next morning the fate of the unfortunate prince was known, as his attendants, accustomed to his irregularities, never entered his apartment early. Immediately the chief persons in the state assembly

Being induced partly by the zeal of cardinals for the house of Medici, to which he was nearly related, partly by the authority of Cosimo Guicciardini, who recalled to their memory, and represented in striking colours, the peace as well as turbulence of their ancient government, they agreed to place Cosimo de' Medici, a youth of eighteen, the only male of that illustrious house, at the head of the government; though at the same time such was the love of liberty, that they established several regulations in order to circumscribe and moderate his power.

Meanwhile, Lorenzo having reached a place of safety, made known what he had done, to Philip Strozzi and the other Florentines who had been driven into exile, or who had voluntarily yielded, when the republican form of government was abolished, in order to make way for the domination of the Medici. By them, the deed was filled with extravagant praises, and the virtue of Lorenzo was compared to that of the elder Cato, who disregarded the ties of blood, or that of the younger, who forgot the friendship and favours of the tyrant, that they might strive or recover the liberty of their country.<sup>e</sup> *did they rest satisfied with empty pane*

<sup>e</sup> *Lettere di Principi*, tom. iii. p. 62.

openly invited by the French ambassador at Rome, and secretly encouraged by those who bore no good-will to the house of Medici, they entered the Florentine dominions with a considerable body of men. But the people, who had elected Cosmo possessed not only the art of supporting his government, but also the art to employ them in the most proper manner. They levied, with the greatest expedition, a great number of troops; they endeavoured by all art to gain the citizens of greatest authority, to render the administration of the young prince agreeable to the people. Above all, they sought the emperor's protection, as the only firm foundation of Cosmo's dignity and power. (Knowing the propensity of the Florentines to the friendship of France, and how much they were partizans of a republican government, they represented him as the oppressor of their liberties, and he was greatly for his interest to prevent the establishment of the ancient constitution.)

ictory over the exiles, whose troops he surprised in the night-time, and took most of the prisoners: an event which broke all their resources, and fully established his own authority. though he was extremely desirous of the personal honour of marrying the emperor's daughter, the widow of his predecessor, Charles, he already of his attachment, chose rather to ratify the pope, by bestowing her on his son-in-law.

During the war between the emperor and France, an event had happened which abated in some degree the warmth and cordiality of friendship which had long subsisted between the latter and the king of England. James the fifth of Scotland, an enterprising young prince, having learned of the emperor's intention to invade Provence, was so fond of shewing that he did not differ to any of his ancestors in the sincerity of his attachment to the French crown, and so anxious to distinguish himself by some military exploit, that he levied a body of troops with a view to leading them in person to the assistance of the king of France. Though some unfortunate accidents prevented his carrying any troops into France, nothing could divert him from going thither in person. Immediately after his landing, he hastened to Provence, but had been detained so long in his voyage, that he was too late to have any share in the military operations, and met the king on his return after



the retreat of the Imperialists. But so greatly pleased with his zeal, and his manners and conversation, that he refused him his daughter Magdalen, demanded in marriage. It mortified extremely to see a prince, of whom moderately jealous, form an alliance [1537], from which he derived such of reputation as well as security. Not, however, with decency, opposing bestowing his daughter upon a monarch descended from a race of princes, the most faithful allies of the French crown.

James, upon the sudden death of Mary, demanded as his second wife Mary of Scots, warmly solicited Francis to deny his order to disappoint him, asked that marriage for himself. When Francis perceived the Scottish king's sincere courtship to his daughter, and his rejection of the emperor's malevolent proposal, he discovered no partiality. The pacification agreed upon, and the familiar interview of the two kings at Aigues-mortes, filled Henry's mind with suspicions, as if Francis had altogether exchanged his friendship for the sake of new alliances with the emperor. Charles, there-

f cause of their discord was removed; so, without touching upon the delicate question of her divorce, he might now take what measures he thought most effectual for regaining Henry's good-will. For this purpose, he began with proposing several marriage-treaties to the king. He offered his niece, a daughter of the king of Denmark, to Henry himself; he wanted the princess Mary for one of the princes of Portugal, and was even willing to give her as the king's illegitimate daughter.<sup>h</sup> Though none of these projected alliances ever took place, or perhaps were ever seriously intended, they occasioned such frequent intercourse between the courts, and so many reciprocal professions of civility and esteem, as considerably cooled the edge of Henry's rancour against the emperor, and paved the way for that union between them which afterwards proved so disadvantageous to the French king.

The ambitious schemes in which the emperor had been engaged, and the wars he had been carrying on for some years, proved, as usual, extremely favourable to the progress of the reformation in Germany. While Charles was absent upon his African expedition, or intent on projects against France, his chief object in many was to prevent the dissensions about religion from disturbing the public tranquillity, by granting such indulgence to the protestant princes as might induce them to concur with his measures, or at least hinder them from taking : *with his rival.* For this reason, he was

<sup>h</sup> *Mem. de Ribier, t. i. 496.*  
.. III.

careful to secure to the protestants the possession of all the advantages which they had gained by the articles of pacification at Nuremberg, in the year one thousand five hundred and thirty-two<sup>l</sup>; and except some slight trouble from the proceedings of the Imperial chamber, they met with nothing to disturb them in the exercise of their religion, or to interrupt the successful zeal with which they propagated their opinions. Meanwhile the pope continued his negotiations for convoking a general council; and though the protestants had expressed great dissatisfaction with his intention to fix upon Mantua as the place of meeting, he adhered obstinately to his choice, issued a bull on the second of June one thousand five hundred and thirty-six, appointing it to assemble in that city on the twenty-third of May the year following: he nominated three cardinals to preside in his name; enjoined all Christian princes to countenance it by their authority, and invited the prelates of every nation to attend in person. This summons of a council, an assembly which from its nature and intention demanded quiet times, as well as pacific dispositions, at the very juncture when the emperor was on his march towards France, and ready to involve a great part of Europe in the confusions of war, appeared to every person extremely unseasonable. It was intimated, however, to all the different courts by nuncios dispatched of purpose<sup>k</sup>. With an intention to gratify the Germans, the emperor, during his residence in Rome,

<sup>l</sup> *Du Mont Corps Diplom. tom. iv. part 2. p. 338.*

<sup>k</sup> *Pallavic. Hist. Conc. Trid. 113.*

id warmly solicited the pope to call a council ; it being at the same time willing to try every t in order to persuade Paul to depart from the eutrality which he preserved between him and Francis, he sent Heldo his vice-chancellor into Germany, along with a nuncio dispatched thither, instructing him to second the nuncio's representations, and to enforce them with the whole weight of the Imperial authority. The protestants gave them audience at Smalkalde [Feb. 25, 1537], where they had assembled in a body in order to receive them. But after weighing all their arguments, they unanimously refused to acknowledge a council summoned in the name and by the authority of the pope alone ; in which he assumed the sole right of presiding ; which was to be held in a city not only far distant from Germany, but subject to a prince, who was a stranger to them, and closely connected with the court of Rome ; and to which their divines could not repair with safety, especially after their doctrines had been stigmatized in the very bull of convocation with the name of heresy. These and many other objections against the council, which appeared to them unanswerable, they enumerated in a large manifesto, which they published in vindication of their conduct <sup>1</sup>.

Against this the court of Rome exclaimed as a flagrant proof of their obstinacy and presumption, and the pope still persisted in his resolution to hold the council at the time and in the place appointed. But some unexpected difficulties

*Sleidan. l. xii. 123, &c. Seckend. Com. lib. iii. p. 1*

being started by the duke of Mantua, both at the right of jurisdiction over the persons resorted to the council, and the security of capital amidst such a concourse of strangers pope [Oct. 8, 1538], after fruitless endeavours to adjust these, first prorogued the council some months, and afterwards, transferring place of meeting to Vicenza in the Venetian territories, appointed it to assemble on the first of May in the following year. As neither the emperor nor the French king, who had then come to any accommodation, would permit their subjects to repair thither, not a single delegate appeared on the day prefixed, and the pope, that his authority might not become alto-

suggested as most proper were either inadequate, or were never<sup>a</sup> applied. The report and resolution of these deputies, though intended to be kept secret, were transmitted by some accident into Germany, and being immediately made public, afforded ample matter for reflection, and triumph to the protestants<sup>n</sup>. On the one hand, they demonstrated the necessity of a reformation in the head as well as the members of the church, and even pointed out many of the corruptions against which Luther and his followers had remonstrated with the greatest vehemence. They shewed, on the other hand, that it was vain to expect this reformation from ecclesiastics themselves, who, as Luther strongly expressed it, piddled at curing warts, while they overlooked or confirmed ulcers<sup>o</sup>.

1539.] The earnestness with which the emperor seemed, at first, to press their acquiescing in the pope's scheme of holding a council in Italy, alarmed the protestant princes so much, that they thought it prudent to strengthen their confederacy, by admitting several new members who solicited that privilege, particularly the king of Denmark. Heldo, who, during his residence in Germany, had observed all the advantages which they derived from that union, endeavoured to counterbalance its effects by an alliance among the catholic powers of the empire. This league, distinguished by the name of *Holy*, was merely defensive; and though concluded by Heldo in the emperor's name, was afterwards disowned by him, and *subscribed* by very few princes<sup>p</sup>.

<sup>n</sup> *Sleidan*, 233.

<sup>o</sup> *Seckl.* 1. iii. 164.

<sup>p</sup> *Seckl.* 1. iii. 171. *Recueil des Traitez*,

The protestants soon got intelligence of this association, notwithstanding all the endeavours of the contracting parties to conceal it; and their zeal, always apt to suspect and to dread, even to excess, every thing that seemed to threaten religion, instantly took the alarm, as if the emperor had been just ready to enter upon the execution of some formidable plan for the extirpation of their opinions. In order to disappoint this, they held frequent consultations, they courted the kings of France and England with great assiduity, and even began to think of raising the respective contingents both in men and money which they were obliged to furnish by the treaty of Smalkalde. But it was not long be-

impious encroachment upon his prerogative never formally ratified this convention, it observed with considerable exactness, and it strengthened the basis of that ecclesiastical liberty for which the protestants contend.

A few days after the convention at Francfort, the duke of Saxony died [April 24], and his death was an event of great advantage to the reformation. That prince, the head of the junior, or younger branch of the Saxon line, possessed, as marquis of Misnia and Thuringia, extensive territories, comprehending Dresden, Leipzig, and other cities now the most considerable in the electorate. From the first dawn of the reformation, he had been its enemy as much as the electoral princes were its friends, and had carried on his opposition not without all the zeal flowing from religious prejudices, but with a virulence inspired by personal antipathy to Luther, and embittered by the domestic animosity subsisting between him and another branch of his family. By his death without issue, his succession fell to his brother John, whose attachment to the protestant religion surpassed, if possible, that of his predecessor. Henry no sooner took possession of his new dominions, than, disregarding a clause of the emperor's will, dictated by his bigotry, whereby he bequeathed all his territories to the emperor king of the Romans, if his brother should attempt to make any innovation in religion, he retained some protestant divines, and among them



Luther himself, to Leipzig. By their advice and assistance, he overturned in a few weeks the whole system of ancient rites, established the full exercise of the reformed religion, with the universal applause of his subjects, who had long wished for this change, which the authority of their duke alone had hitherto prevented<sup>r</sup>. This revolution delivered the protestants from the danger to which they were exposed by having an inveterate enemy situated in the middle of their territories; and they had now the satisfaction of seeing that the possessions of the princes and cities attached to their cause, extended in one great and almost unbroken line from the shore of the Baltic to the banks of the Rhine.

Soon after the conclusion of the truce at Nice, an event happened, which satisfied all Europe that Charles had prosecuted the war to the utmost extremity that the state of his affairs would permit. Vast arrears were due to his troops, whom he had long amused with vain hopes and promises. As they now foresaw what little attention would be paid to their demands, when by the re-establishment of peace their services became of less importance, they lost all patience, broke out into an open mutiny, and declared that they thought themselves entitled to seize by violence what was detained from them contrary to all justice. Nor was this spirit of sedition confined to one part of the emperor's dominions; the mutiny was almost as general as the grievance which gave rise to it. The soldiers in the Milanese plundered the open country without

<sup>r</sup> Sleidan, 249.

controul, and filled the capital itself with consternation. Those in garrison at Goletta threatened to give up that important fortress to Barbarossa. In Sicily, the troops proceeded to still greater excesses; having driven away their officers, they elected others in their stead, defeated a body of men whom the viceroy sent against them, took and pillaged several cities, conducting themselves all the while in such a manner, that their operations resembled rather the regular proceedings of a concerted rebellion, than the rashness and violence of a military mutiny. But by the address and prudence of the generals, who, partly by borrowing money in their own name, or in that of their master, partly by extorting large sums from the cities in their respective provinces, raised what was sufficient to discharge the arrears of the soldiers, these insurrections were quelled. The greater part of the troops were disbanded, such a number only being kept in pay as was necessary for garrisoning the principal towns, and protecting the sea-coasts from the insults of the Turks<sup>1</sup>.

It was happy for the emperor that the abilities of his generals extricated him out of these difficulties, which it exceeded his own power to have removed. He had depended, as his chief resource for discharging the arrears due to his soldiers, upon the subsidies which he expected from his Castilian subjects. For this purpose, he assembled the Cortes of Castile at Toledo, and having represented to them the extraordinary expence of his military operations, together with

<sup>1</sup> *Jovii Hist. l. xxxvii. 203. c. Sandov. Ferreras, ix. 20*

the great debts in which these had neceſſarily involved him, he propoſed to levy ſuch ſums for the preſent exigency of his affairs as demanded a general exciſe on commodities. But the commons already felt themſelves oppreſſed by a load of taxes unknown to their anceſtors, had often complained that their court drained not only of its wealth but of its ſtrength, in order to proſecute quarrels in which it was not intereſted, and to fight battles which it could reap no benefit; and they determined not to add voluntarily to their burdens, or to furniſh the emperor with the means of engaging in new enterpriſes no leſs ruinous to the kingdom than moſt of thoſe which he had hitherto carried on. The nobles, in particular, inveighed with great vehemence againſt the propoſition propoſed, as an encroachment on a valuable and diſtinguiſhing privilege of the order, that of being exempted from the payment of any tax. They demanded a conference with the representatives of the cities and burghs of the ſtate of the nation. They contended that Charles would imitate the example of his deceſſors, who had reſided conſtantly in France, and would avoid entangling himſelf in foreign wars.

tally neglected<sup>t</sup>. Charles, after employing arguments, entreaties, and promises, but without success, in order to overcome their obstinacy, dismissed the assembly with great indignation. From that period neither the nobles nor the prelates have been called to these assemblies, on pretence that such as pay no part of the public taxes, should not claim any vote in laying them on. None have been admitted to the Cortes but the procurators or representatives of eighteen cities. These, to the number of thirty-six, being two from each community, form an assembly which bears no resemblance either in power or dignity or independence to the ancient Cortes, and are absolutely at the devotion of the court in all their determinations<sup>u</sup>. Thus the imprudent zeal with which the Castilian nobles had supported the regal prerogative, in opposition to the claims of the commons during the commotions in the year one thousand five hundred and twenty-one, proved at last fatal to their own body. By enabling Charles to depress one of the orders in the state, they destroyed that balance to which the constitution owed its security, and put it in his power, or in that of his successors, to humble the other, and to strip it gradually of its most valuable privileges.

At that time, however, the Spanish grandees still possessed extraordinary power as well as privileges, which they exercised and defended with an haughtiness peculiar to themselves. Of this the emperor himself had a mortifying proof during

<sup>t</sup> *Sandoz. Hist. vol. ii. 269.*

<sup>u</sup> *Id. Le Science du Gouvernement, par M. de Real  
am, li. p. 102.*

LAO S HONOR WITH HIS DUTY, WHICH THAT  
grandee resenting, drew his sword, b  
wounded the officer. Charles, provoked  
an insolent deed in his presence, imm  
ordered Ronquillo the judge of the cou  
rest the duke ; Ronquillo advanced to  
his charge, when the constable of Casti  
posing, checked him, claimed the right  
diction over a grandee as a privilege of h  
and conducted Infantado to his own ap  
All the nobles present were so pleased  
boldness of the constable in asserting th  
of their order, that, deserting the emper  
attended him to his house with infinite a  
and Charles returned to the palace unacco  
by any person but the cardinal Tavera  
emperor, how sensible soever of the affr  
the danger of irritating a jealous and high  
order of men, whom the slightest appea  
offence might drive to the most unwar  
extremities. For that reason, instead of

wound. Thus the affair was entirely forgotten<sup>2</sup>; nor would it have deserved to be mentioned, if it were not a striking example of the high and independent spirit of the Spanish nobles in that age, as well as an instance of the emperor's dexterity in accommodating his conduct to the circumstances in which he was placed.

Charles was far from discovering the same condescension or lenity towards the citizens of Ghent, who not long after broke out into open rebellion against his government. An event which happened in the year one thousand five hundred and thirty-six, gave occasion to this rash insurrection so fatal to that flourishing city. At that time the queen-dowager of Hungary, governess of the Netherlands, having received orders from her brother to invade France with all the forces which she could raise, she assembled the States of the United Provinces, and obtained from them a subsidy of twelve hundred thousand florins, to defray the expence of that undertaking. Of this sum, the county of Flanders was obliged to pay a third part as its proportion. But the citizens of Ghent, the most considerable city in that country,averse to a war with France, with which they carried on an extensive and gainful commerce, refused to pay their quota, and contended, that a consequence of stipulations between them and the ancestors of their present sovereign the emperor, no tax could be levied upon them, unless they had given their express consent to the imposition of it. The governess, on the other hand, maintained, that as the subsidy of twelve

<sup>2</sup> Sandov. ii. 274. Ferreras, ix, 212. Miniana, 113.  
OL. III. P. hundr

hundred thousand florins had been granted by the States of Flanders, of which their representatives were members, they were bound, of course, to conform to what was enacted by them. This was the first principle in society, on which the tranquillity and order of government depend: the inclinations of the minority must be ruled by the judgment and decision of the majority.

The citizens of Ghent, however, were unwilling to relinquish a privilege of such importance as that they claimed. Having been accustomed, under the government of the Duke of Burgundy, to enjoy extensive immunities, they were loath to be treated with much indulgence, and were unwilling to sacrifice to the delegated monarch, those rights and liberties which they had often and successfully asserted against the most despotic princes. The queen, though she endeavored at first to soothe them, and to reconcile them to their duty by various concessions, was much irritated by the obstinacy with which they adhered to their claim, that she ordered the citizens of Ghent, on whom she could rely in any part of the Netherlands, to be punished. But this rash action made an impression

vindicating its rights against the encroachment<sup>s</sup> of a woman, who either did not know or did not regard their immunities. All but a few inconsiderable towns declined entering into any confederacy against the governess: they joined, however, in petitioning her to put off the term for payment of the tax so long, that they might have it in their power to send some of their number into Spain, in order to lay their title to exemption before their sovereign. This she granted with some difficulty. But Charles received their commissioners with an haughtiness to which they were not accustomed from their ancient princes, and enjoining them to yield the same respectful obedience to his sister, which they owed to him in person, remitted the examination of their claim to the council of Malines. This court, which is properly a standing committee of the parliament or states of the country, and which possesses the supreme jurisdiction in all matters civil as well as criminal<sup>y</sup>, pronounced the claim of the citizens of Ghent to be ill-founded, and appointed them forthwith to pay their proportion of the tax.

Enraged at this decision, which they considered as notoriously unjust, and rendered desperate on seeing their rights betrayed by that very court which was bound to protect them, the people of Ghent ran to arms in a tumultuary manner; drove such of the nobility as resided among them out of the city; secured several of the emperor's officers; put one of them to the torture,

<sup>y</sup> *Descrittione di tutti Paesi Bassi di Lud. Guicciardini. An. 1571. fol. p. 53.*



for repairing and adding to their tortin  
and openly erected the standard of 1  
against their sovereign 2. Sensible, how  
their inability to support what their 2  
prompted them to undertake, and def  
securing a protector against the formidab  
by which they might expect soon to be a  
they sent some of their number to Franc  
ing not only to acknowledge him as th  
reign, and to put him in immediate poss  
Ghent, but to assist him with all their  
recovering those provinces in the Netl  
which had anciently belonged to the  
France, and had been so lately re-united  
the decree of the parliament of Paris.  
expected proposition coming from pers  
had it in their power to have performed  
one part of what they undertook, and w  
contribute so effectually towards the e  
of the whole, opened great as well as  
prospects to Francis's ambition. The

principality for the duke of Orleans, no less suitable to his dignity than that which his father aimed at obtaining. To this, the Flemings, who were acquainted with the French manners and government, would not have been averse; and his own subjects, weary of their destructive expeditions into Italy, would have turned their arms towards this quarter with more good-will, and with greater vigour. Several considerations, nevertheless, prevented Francis from laying hold of this opportunity, the most favourable in appearance which had ever presented itself, of extending his own dominions, or distressing the emperor. From the time of their interview at Aiguemortes, Charles had continued to court the king of France with wonderful attention; and often flattered him with hopes of gratifying at last his wishes concerning the Milanese, by granting the investiture of it either to him or to one of his sons. But though these hopes and promises were thrown out with no other intention than to detach him from his confederacy with the grand seignior, or to raise suspicions in Solymán's mind by the appearance of a cordial and familiar intercourse subsisting between the courts of Paris and Madrid, Francis was weak enough to catch at the shadow by which he had been so often amused, and from eagerness to seize it, relinquished what must have proved a more substantial acquisition. Besides this, the dauphin, jealous to excess of his brother, and unwilling that a prince who seemed to be of a restless and enterprising nature, should obtain an establishment, *which from its situation might be considered almost as a domestic one, made use of Montmorency*

he had formerly in Italy, and that nothing be so efficacious to overcome the aversion to this as a sacred adherence to the truce, and refusing, on an occasion so to countenance the rebellious subjects of Francis, apt of himself to over-rate the the Milanese, because he estimated it of length of time as well as from the great which he had employed in order to recover and fond of every action which had the appearance of generosity, assented without difficulties so agreeable to his own, rejected propositions of the citizens of Ghent, and their deputies with an harsh answer <sup>a</sup>.

Not satisfied with this, by a farther resolution in generosity, he communicated to the his whole negotiation with the malecontents all that he knew of their schemes and intentions.

against his government. He was thoroughly acquainted with the genius and qualities of his subjects in that country; with their love of liberty; their attachment to their ancient privileges and customs; as well as the invincible obstinacy with which their minds, slow but firm and persevering, adhered to any measure on which they had deliberately resolved. He easily saw what encouragement and support they might have derived from the assistance of France; and though now free from any danger on that quarter, he was still sensible that some immediate as well as vigorous interposition was necessary, in order to prevent the spirit of disaffection from spreading in a country where the number of cities, the multitude of people, together with the great wealth diffused among them by commerce, rendered it peculiarly formidable, and would supply it with inexhaustible resources. No expedient, after long deliberation, appeared to him so effectual as his going in person to the Netherlands; and the governors his sister being of the same opinion, warmly solicited him to undertake the journey. There were only two routes which he could take; one by land through Italy and Germany, the other entirely by sea, from some port in Spain to one in the Low-Countries. But the former was more tedious than suited the present exigency of his affairs; nor could he in consistency with his dignity, or even his safety, pass through Germany without such a train both of attendants and of troops, as would have added greatly to the time he must have consumed in his journey; the latter was dangerous at this season, and while he remained uncertain with respect to the friend

expeditious way of reaching the net.  
He proposed in his council to demand F  
permission for that purpose. All his cou  
joined with one voice in condemning the  
as no less rash than unprecedented, and  
must infallibly expose him to disgrace  
danger ; to disgrace, if the demand were  
in the manner that he had reason to exp  
danger, if he put his person in the powe  
enemy whom he had often offended, who  
cient injuries to revenge, as well as sub  
present contest still remaining undecided  
Charles, who had studied the character  
rival with greater care and more profound  
ment than any of his ministers, persisted  
plan, and flattered himself that it might  
complished not only without danger to h  
person, but even without the expence.

left whatever he should grant, under his present circumstances, might seem rather to be extorted by necessity, than to flow from friendship or the love of justice. Francis, instead of attending to the snare which such a slight artifice scarcely concealed, was so dazzled with the splendour of overcoming an enemy by acts of generosity, and so pleased with the air of superiority which the rectitude and disinterestedness of his proceedings gave him on this occasion, that he at once assented to all that was demanded. Judging of the emperor's heart by his own, he imagined that the sentiments of gratitude, arising from the remembrance of good offices and liberal treatment, would determine him more forcibly to fulfil what he had so often promised, than the most precise stipulations that could be inserted in any treaty.

Upon this, Charles, to whom every moment was precious, set out, notwithstanding the fears and suspicions of his Spanish subjects, with a small but splendid train of about an hundred persons. At Bayonne, on the frontiers of France, he was received by the Dauphin and the duke of Orleans, attended by the constable Montmorency. The two princes offered to go into Spain, and to remain there as hostages for the emperor's safety; but this he rejected, declaring, that he relied with implicit confidence on the king's honour, and had never demanded, nor would accept of any other pledge for his security. In all the towns through which he passed, *the greatest possible magnificence was displayed; the magistrates presented him the keys of the gates; the prison doors were*

open; and, by the royal honours he appeared more like the sovereign than a foreign prince. [1540] They advanced as far as Chatelherault to their interview was distinguished by expressions of friendship and regard. They proceeded together towards Paris, and the inhabitants of that city, the spectacle of two rival monarchs, who had disturbed and laid waste Europe twenty years, making their solemn treaty with all the symptoms of harmony, as if they had forgotten past injuries, and would not revive them in the future <sup>a</sup>.

Charles remained six days at Paris amidst the perpetual caresses of the French and the various entertainments contrived for him. In order to do him honour, he discovered an impatience to continue his journey much from an apprehension of discontent constantly haunted him, as from the knowledge of his presence in the Low-Countries. He was sensible of the dissimulation of his own ministers, and trembled when he reflected that some day or other they might betray them to his rival, and so to suspect them; and though his artifice to conceal them should be successful, he was yet fearing that motives of interest might triumph over the scruples of honour. Francis to avail himself of the advantage of his hands. Nor were there want among the French ministers, who

<sup>a</sup> *Thuan. Hist. lib. i. c. 14. Mem. d.*

king to turn his own arts against the emperor, and as the retribution due for so many instances of fraud or falsehood, to seize and detain his person until he granted him full satisfaction with regard to all the just claims of the French crown. But no consideration could induce Francis to violate the faith which he had pledged, nor could any argument convince him that Charles, after all the promises that he had given, and all the favours which he had received, might still be capable of deceiving him. Full of this false confidence, he accompanied him to St. Quintin; and the two princes, who had met him on the borders of Spain, did not take leave of him until he entered his dominions in the Low-Countries.

As soon as the emperor reached his own territories [Jan. 24], the French ambassadors demanded the accomplishment of what he had promised concerning the investiture of Milan; but Charles, under the plausible pretext that his whole attention was then engrossed by the consultations necessary towards suppressing the rebellion in Ghent, put off the matter for some time. But in order to prevent Francis from suspecting his sincerity, he still continued to talk of his resolutions with respect to that matter in the same strain as when he entered France, and even wrote to the king much to the same purpose, though in general terms, and with equivocal expressions, which he might afterwards explain away or interpret at pleasure <sup>b</sup>.

<sup>b</sup> *Memoires de Ribier*, i. 504.

Meanwhile



Meanwhile, the unfortunate citizens destitute of leaders capable either of directing their councils, or conducting their arms, were abandoned by the French king, and by their countrymen; were unable to resist the offended sovereign, who was ready against them with one body of troops that he had raised in the Netherlands, and a third drawn out of Germany, and a third arrived from Spain by sea. The news of danger made them, at last, so sensible of their own folly, that they sent ambassadors to the emperor, imploring his mercy, and opened their gates at his approach without vouchsafing them any other terms than that he would appear among them as their sovereign, with the sceptre and the sword in his hand, began his march at the head of his army. Though he chose to enter the city on the fourth of February, his birth-day, he did not come with nothing of that tenderness which was natural towards the place of his nativity. Twenty-six of the principal nobles were put to death [April 20]; a greater number were sent into banishment; the city was obliged to have forfeited all its privileges and the revenues belonging to it were taken away; its ancient form of government was

tious spirit of the citizens, orders were given to erect a strong citadel, for defraying the expence of which a fine of an hundred and fifty thousand florins was imposed on the inhabitants, together with an annual tax of six thousand florins for the support of the garrison <sup>c</sup>. By these rigorous proceedings, Charles not only punished the citizens of Ghent, but set an awful example of severity before his other subjects in the Netherlands, whose immunities and privileges, partly the effect, partly the cause of their extensive commerce, circumscribed the prerogative of their sovereign within very narrow bounds, and often stood in the way of measures which he wished to undertake, or fettered and retarded him in his operations.

Charles having thus vindicated and re-established his authority in the Low-Countries, and being now under no necessity of continuing the same scene of falsehood and dissimulation with which he had long amused Francis, began gradually to throw aside the veil under which he had concealed his intentions with respect to the Milanese. At first, he eluded the demands of the French ambassadors, when they again reminded him of his promises; then he proposed, by way of equivalent for the dutchy of Milan, to grant the duke of Orleans the investiture of Flanders, clogging the offer, however, with impracticable conditions, or such as he knew would be rejected <sup>d</sup>. At last, being driven from all his evasions and subterfuges by their insisting for a categorical answer, he peremptorily refused to give up a

<sup>c</sup> *Harzi Annales Brabantæ*, vol. i. 616.

<sup>d</sup> *Mem. de Ribier*, i. 509. 514.

territory of such value, or voluntarily to make such a liberal addition to the strength of an enemy, by diminishing his own power <sup>e</sup>. He denied, at the same time, that he had ever made any promise which could bind him to an action so foolish, and so contrary to his own interest <sup>f</sup>.

Of all the transactions in the emperor's life, this, without doubt, reflects the greatest dishonour on his reputation <sup>g</sup>. Though Charles was not extremely scrupulous at other times about the means which he employed for accomplishing his ends, and was not always observant of the strict precepts of veracity and honour, he had hitherto maintained some regard for the maxims of that less precise and rigid morality by which monarchs think themselves entitled to regulate their conduct. But, on this occasion, the scheme that he formed of deceiving a generous and open-hearted prince; the illiberal and mean artifices by which he carried it on; the insensibility with which he received all the marks of his friendship, as well as the ingratitude with which he requited them, are all equally unbecoming the dignity of his character, and inconsistent with the grandeur of his views.

This transaction exposed Francis to as much scorn as it did the emperor to censure. After the experience of a long reign, after so many opportunities of discovering the duplicity and artifices of his rival, the credulous simplicity with which he trusted him at this juncture seemed to merit no other return than what it actually met

<sup>e</sup> Ribier, i. 519.

<sup>f</sup> Bellay, 365-6.

with. Francis, however, remonstrated and exclaimed, as if this had been the first instance in which the emperor had deceived him. Feeling, as is usual, the insult which was offered to his understanding still more sensibly than the injury done to his interest, he discovered such resentment, as made it obvious that he would lay hold on the first opportunity of being revenged, and that a war, no less rancorous than that which had so lately raged, would soon break out anew in Europe.

But singular as the transaction which has been related may appear, this year is rendered still more memorable by the establishment of the order of Jesuits; a body whose influence on ecclesiastical as well as civil affairs hath been so considerable, that an account of the genius of its laws and government justly merits a place in history. When men take a view of the rapid progress of this society towards wealth and power; when they contemplate the admirable prudence with which it has been governed; when they attend to the persevering and systematic spirit with which its schemes have been carried on; they are apt to ascribe such a singular institution to the superior wisdom of its founder, and to suppose that he had formed and digested his plan with profound policy. But the Jesuits, as well as the other monastic orders, are indebted for the existence of their order not to the wisdom of their founder, but to his enthusiasm. Ignatio Loyola, whom I have already mentioned on occasion of the wound which he received in defending Pampeluna<sup>h</sup>, was

<sup>h</sup> Vol. ii. Book ii. p. 155.

a fanatic distinguished by extravagancies in sentiment and conduct, no less incompatible with maxims of sober reason, than repugnant to spirit of true religion. The wild adventures and visionary schemes, in which his enthusiasm engaged him, equal any thing recorded in legends of the Romish saints; but are unworthy of notice in history.

Prompted by this fanatical spirit, or incited by the love of power and distinction, from which such pretenders to superior sanctity are not exempt, Loyola was ambitious of becoming founder of a religious order. The plan, which he formed of its constitution and laws, was suggested, as he gave out, and as his followers teach, by the immediate inspiration of heaven. But notwithstanding this high pretension, his design met at first with violent opposition. He applied to the pope, to whom Loyola had applied for the sanction of his authority to confirm the institution. He referred his petition to a committee of cardinals. They represented the establishment to be unnecessary as well as dangerous, and Paul refused to grant his approbation of it. At last, Loyola moved all his scruples by an offer which it was impossible for any pope to resist. He proposed that besides the three vows of poverty, of chastity, and of monastic obedience, which are common to all the orders of regulars, the members of his society should take a fourth vow of obedience to the pope, binding themselves to follow whithersoever he should command for the service

*i* *Compte rendu des Constitutions des Jésuites au Parlement de Provence, par M. de Monclar, p. 285.*

of religion, and without requiring any thing from the holy see for their support. At a time when the papal authority had received such a shock by the revolt of so many nations from the Romish church; at a time when every part of the popish system was attacked with so much violence and success, the acquisition of a body of men, thus peculiarly devoted to the see of Rome, and whom it might set in opposition to all its enemies, was an object of the highest consequence. Paul, instantly perceiving this, confirmed the institution of the Jesuits by his bull [Sept. 27]; granted the most ample privileges to the members of the society; and appointed Loyola to be the first general of the order. The event hath fully justified Paul's discernment, in expecting such beneficial consequences to the see of Rome from this institution. In less than half a century, the society obtained establishments in every country that adhered to the Roman catholic church; its power and wealth increased amazingly; the number of its members became great; their character as well as accomplishments were still greater; and the Jesuits were celebrated by the friends, and dreaded by the enemies, of the Romish faith, as the most able and enterprising order in the church.

The constitution and laws of the society were perfected by Laynez and Aquaviva, the two generals who succeeded Loyola, men far superior to their master in abilities, and in the science of government. They framed that system of profound and artful policy which distinguishes the order. The large infusion of fanaticism, mingled with its regulations, should be imputed to Loyola.

Many circumstances concurred in singularity of character to the order of monks in forming the members of it not to take a greater part in the affairs of the world than any other body of monks, but to exert a superior influence in the conduct of

the primary object of almost all the monastic orders to separate men from the world, and to be concerned in its affairs. In the solitude and silence of the cloister, the monk is called to attend to his own salvation by extraordinary acts of mortification and piety. He is dead to the world, and ought not to mingle in its transactions.

He is not of the world, but by his

h these may have upon religion; they are  
ted to study the dispositions of persons in  
rank, and to cultivate their friendship<sup>1</sup>;  
by the very constitution, as well as genius  
e order, a spirit of action and intrigue is in-  
into all its members.

the object of the society of Jesuits differed  
that of the other monastic orders, the di-  
y was no less in the form of its govern-  
. The other orders are to be considered  
luntary associations, in which whatever af-  
the whole body is regulated by the common  
ge of all its members. The executive  
r is vested in the persons placed at the head  
ch convent, or of the whole society: the  
ative authority resides in the community.  
rs of moment, relating to particular con-  
, are determined in conventual chapters;  
as respect the whole order are considered in  
al congregations. But Loyola, full of the  
of implicit obedience, which he had derived  
his military profession, appointed that the  
nment of his order should be purely mo-  
ical. A general, chosen for life by de-  
s from the several provinces. possessed power



would obedience, but to resign up to  
inclinations of their own wills, and the  
of their own understandings. They  
listen to his injunctions, as if they had  
entered by Christ himself. Under him  
they were to be mere passive instru-  
clay in the hands of the potter; or  
carcasses incapable of resistance<sup>m</sup>.

gular form of policy could not fail  
its character on all the members of the  
to give a peculiar force to all its operat-  
is not in the annals of mankind any  
such a perfect despotism, exercised  
monks shut up in the cells of a convent  
men dispersed among all the nations of

As the constitutions of the order  
general such absolute dominion over  
bers, they carefully provide for his  
fectly informed with respect to the cha-  
abilities of his subjects. Every one  
offers himself as a candidate for enteri-

The society, not satisfied with penetrating in this manner into the innermost recesses of the heart, directs each member to observe the words and actions of the novices; they are constituted spies upon their conduct; and are bound to disclose every thing of importance concerning them to the superior. In order that this scrutiny into their character may be as complete as possible, a long noviciate must expire, during which they pass through the several gradations of ranks in the society, and they must have attained the full age of thirty-three years before they can be admitted to take the final vows, by which they become *professed* members°. By these various methods, the superiors, under whose immediate inspection the novices are placed, acquire a thorough knowledge of their dispositions and talents. In order that the general, who is the soul that animates and moves the whole society, may have under his eye every thing necessary to inform or direct him, the provincials and heads of the several houses are obliged to transmit to him regular and frequent reports concerning the members under their inspection. In these they descend into minute details with respect to the character of each person, his abilities natural or acquired, his temper, his experience in affairs, and the particular department for which he is best fitted p. These reports, when digested and arranged,

° *Compte par M. de Moncl. 215. 241. Sur la Destr. des Jes. par M. d'Alemb p. 39.*

p *M. de Chalotais has made a calculation of the number of these reports, which the general of the Jesuits must annually rec*

ranged, are entered into regifters that the general may, at one survey the ftate of the fociety the earth; obferve the qualifcations of its members; and thus by information, the instruments, and the power can employ in any he thinks meet to deftine them.


As it was the professed intention of Jefuits to labour with unwearied diligence for promoting the falvation of men, and of courfe, in many active functions of their firft institution, they confidered the education of youth as their peculiar province.

They receive according to the regulations of the order an amount in all to 6584. If this fum be divided by the number of provinces in the order, it will give the number of reports concerning the ftate of each province to be made at Rome annually. *Compte, p. 52.* But the reports are not by extraordinary letters, or fuch as are made by or fpies whom the general and provincial heads of houfes. *Compte par M. de Moncl. des Jefuites, Ann. 1761. tom. iv. p. 56.* The heads of houfes not only report concerning the ftate of the fociety, but are bound to give intelligence of the civil affairs of the country where they refide, fo far as their knowledge of thefe may be of ufe to the fociety. This condition may extend to every province. The general is furnifhed with full information of the tranfactions of every prince and ftate in Europe. *par M. de Moncl. 443. Hift. des Jefuites.* When the affairs with refpect to which they write are of importance, they are directed by the general, and each of them has a particular copy of thefe letters. *Compte par M. Chalotais, p. 54.*

9. *Compte par M. de Moncl. p. 21.*  
*M. de Chalotais, p. 52. 222.*

g spiritual guides and confessors; they shed frequently in order to instruct the ple; they set out as missionaries to convert believing nations. The novelty of the institution, as well as the singularity of its objects, secured the order many admirers and patrons.

governors of the society had the address to themselves of every circumstance in its favour, and in a short time the number as well as influence of its members increased wonderfully. Before the expiration of the sixteenth century, Jesuits had obtained the chief direction of education of youth in every catholic country in Europe. They had become the confessors of most all its monarchs, a function of no small importance in any reign, but under a weak prince prior even to that of minister. They were spiritual guides of almost every person eminent for rank or power. They possessed the highest degree of confidence and interest with the papal court, as the most zealous and able champions for its authority. The advantages which an active and enterprising body of men can derive from all these circumstances are obvious. They formed the minds of men in their youth. They retained an ascendant over them in their advanced years. They possessed, at distant periods, the direction of the most considerable courts in Europe. They mingled in all affairs. They took part in every intrigue and sedition. The general, by means of the extensive intelligence which he received, could regulate the operations of the order with the most perfect discernment, and by means of his absolute



vow of poverty. The order acquired  
sessions in every catholic country ;  
number as well as magnificence of  
buildings, together with the value  
party, moveable or real, it vied with  
opulent of the monastic fraternities  
the sources of wealth common to all  
clergy, the Jesuits possessed one wh  
cular to themselves. Under pretext  
ing the success of their missions, and  
ing the support of their missionarie  
tained a special licence from the cour  
to trade with the nations which they l  
convert. In consequence of this, the  
in an extensive and lucrative commerc  
the East and West Indies. They op  
houses in different parts of Europe  
they vended their commodities. N  
with trade alone, they imitated the  
other commercial societies, and aimed

ing settlements. They acquired possession accordingly of a large and fertile province in the southern continent of America, and reigned as sovereigns over some hundred thousand subjects<sup>a</sup>.

Unhappily for mankind, the vast influence which the order of Jesuits acquired by all these different means, has been often exerted with the most pernicious effect. Such was the tendency of that discipline observed by the society in forming its members, and such the fundamental maxims in its constitution, that every Jesuit was taught to regard the interest of the order as the capital object, to which every consideration was to be sacrificed. This spirit of attachment to their order, the most ardent, perhaps, that ever influenced any body of men<sup>b</sup>, is the characteristic principle of the Jesuits, and serves as a key to the genius of their policy, as well as to the peculiarities in their sentiments and conduct.

As it was for the honour and advantage of the society, that its members should possess an ascendant over persons in high rank or of great power, the desire of acquiring and preserving such a direction of their conduct, with greater facility, has led the Jesuits to propagate a system of relaxed and pliant morality, which accommodates itself to the passions of men, which justifies their vices, which tolerates their imperfections, which authorizes almost every action that

<sup>a</sup> *Hist. des Jes.* iv. 168—196, &c.

<sup>b</sup> *Compte par M. de Moncl.* p. 285.

principle of attachment to the int  
society, have been the most zealk  
those doctrines which tend to exal  
power on the ruins of civil govern  
have attributed to the court of Ro  
tion as extensive and absolute as w  
the most presumptuous pontiffs in  
They have contended for the entire  
of ecclesiastics on the civil magis  
have published such tenets concern  
of opposing princes who were er  
catholic faith, as countenanced tl  
cious crimes, and tended to dissolv  
which connect subjects with their

As the order derived both reput  
thority from the zeal with which it  
defence of the Romish church again  
of the reformers, its members, pro  
tinction, have considered it as their  
tion to combat the opinions, and

and have held opinions equally inconsistent with the order and happiness of civil society. But they, from reasons which are obvious, have either delivered such opinions with greater reserve, or have propagated them with less success. Whoever recollects the events which have happened in Europe during two centuries, will find that the Jesuits may justly be considered as responsible for most of the pernicious effects arising from that corrupt and dangerous casuistry, from those extravagant tenets concerning ecclesiastical power, and from that intolerant spirit, which have been the disgrace of the church of Rome throughout that period, and which have brought so many calamities upon civil society<sup>2</sup>.

But amidst many bad consequences flowing from the institution of this order, mankind, it must be acknowledged, have derived from it some considerable advantages. As the Jesuits made the education of youth one of their capital objects, and as their first attempts to establish colleges for the reception of students were violently opposed by the universities in different countries, it became necessary for them, as the most effectual method of acquiring the public favour, to surpass their rivals in science and industry. This prompted them to cultivate the study of ancient literature with extraordinary ardour. This put them upon various methods for facilitating the instruction of youth; and by the improvements which they made in it, they have contributed so much towards the progress of *polite learning*, that on this account they have

<sup>2</sup> *Encyclopedie*, art. *Jesuites*, tom. viii. 513.



merited well of society. Nor  
Jesuits been successful only in  
ments of literature; it has  
eminent masters in many branches  
can alone boast of a greater number  
authors than all the other religions  
taken together \*.

But it is in the new world they  
exhibited the most wonderful  
abilities, and have contributed  
the benefit of the human species  
querors of that unfortunate quarter  
acted at first as if they had not  
to plunder, to enslave, and to enslave  
habitants. The Jesuits alone made  
object of their settling there.

\* M. d'Alembert has observed, that  
they have made extraordinary progress in erudition  
though they can reckon up many of the  
been eminent mathematicians, antiquaries  
they have even formed some orators of  
order has never produced one man, who is  
enlightened with sound knowledge as to  
philosopher. But it seems to be the  
monastic education to contract and fetter  
The partial attachment of a monk to his  
which is often incompatible with that of  
habit of implicit obedience to the will of  
with the frequent return of the weariness  
of the cloister, debase his faculties, and  
erosity of sentiment and spirit, which qual-  
ifying or feeling justly with respect to what  
conduct. Father Paul of Venice is, per-  
son educated in a cloister, that ever was a  
his prejudices, or who viewed the trans-  
reasoned concerning the interests of society  
sentiments of a philosopher, with the  
versant in affairs, and with the libe-

ing of the last century they obtained admission to the fertile province of Paraguay, which stretches across the southern continent of America, from the east side of the immense ridge of the Andes, to the confines of the Spanish and Portuguese settlements on the banks of the river la Plata. They found the inhabitants in a state little different from that which takes place among men when they first begin to unite together; strangers to the arts; subsisting precariously by hunting or fishing; and hardly acquainted with the first principles of subordination and government. The Jesuits set themselves to instruct and to civilize these savages. They taught them to cultivate the ground, to rear domestic animals, and to build houses. They brought them to live together in villages. They trained them to arts and manufactures. They made them taste the sweets of society; and accustomed them to the blessings of security and order. These people became the subjects of their benefactors; who have governed them with a tender attention, resembling that with which a father directs his children. Respected and beloved almost to adoration, a few Jesuits presided over some hundred thousand Indians. They maintained a perfect equality among all the members of the community. Each of them was obliged to labour, not for himself alone, but for the public. The produce of their fields, together with the fruits of their industry of every species, were deposited in common storehouses, from which each individual received every thing necessary for the supply of his wants. By this institution, almost all the passions which disturb the peace of society, are removed.

render the members of it unhappy, were extinguished. A few magistrates, chosen from among their countrymen by the Indians themselves, watched over the public tranquillity, and secured obedience to the laws. The sanguinary punishments frequent under other governments were unknown. An admonition from a Jesuit, a slight mark of infamy, or, on some singular occasion, a few lashes with a whip, were sufficient to maintain good order among these innocent and happy people *¶*.

But even in this meritorious effort of the Jesuits for the good of mankind, the genius and spirit of their order have mingled and are discernible. They plainly aimed at establishing in Paraguay an independent empire, subject to the society alone, and which, by the superior excellence of its constitution and police, could scarcely have failed to extend its dominion over all the southern continent of America. With this view, in order to prevent the Spaniards or Portuguese in the adjacent settlements from acquiring any dangerous influence over the people within the limits of the province subject to the society, the Jesuits endeavoured to inspire the Indians with hatred and contempt of these nations. They cut off all intercourse between their subjects and the Spanish or Portuguese settlements. They prohibited any private trader of either nation from entering their territories. When they were obliged to admit any person in a public character from the neighbouring governments, they did not

*¶ Hist. du Paraguay par Pere de Charlevoix, tom. ii. 424  
&c. Voyage au Perou par Don G. Juan & D. Ant. de Ulloa, tom. i. 540, &c. Par. 410. 1752.*

peru

him to have any conversation with their  
 , and no Indian was allowed even to enter  
 se where these strangers resided, unless in  
 ence of a Jesuit. In order to render any  
 ication between them as difficult as possi-  
 y industriously avoided giving the Indians  
 owledge of the Spanish, or of any other  
 an language; but encouraged the differ-  
 es, which they had civilized, to acquire a  
 dialect of the Indian tongue, and laboured  
 e that the universal language throughout  
 ominions. As all these precautions, with-  
 itary force, would have been insufficient  
 rendered their empire secure and perma-  
 hey instructed their subjects in the Euro-  
 ts of war. They formed them into bodies  
 lry and infantry, completely armed and  
 ly disciplined. They provided a great  
 f artillery, as well as magazines stored  
 l the implements of war. Thus they esta-  
 an army so numerous and well-appointed,  
 e formidable in a country, where a few  
 nd ill-disciplined battalions composed all  
 itary force kept on foot by the Spaniards  
 ugueuse 2.

Jesuits gained no considerable degree of  
 during the reign of Charles V., who, with  
 d sagacity, discerned the dangerous ten-  
 of the institution, and checked its pro-

But as the order was founded in the  
 of which I write the history, and as the

age de Juan & de Ulloa, tom. i. 549. Recueil des  
*Pieces qui ont paru sur les Affaires des Jesuites en*  
*tom. i. p. 7, &c.*

*et par M. de Monel, p. 312.*

age to which I address this work hath fallen, the view which I have exhibited of the and genius of this formidable body will, I hope, be unacceptable to my readers ; especially as one circumstance has enabled me to enter into this detail with particular advantage. The pope had observed, for two centuries, the decline and power of the order. But while it was producing many fatal effects of these, it could not discern the causes to which they were to be attributed. It was unacquainted with many of the singular regulations in the political constitution or government of the Jesuits, which formed the enterprising spirit of intrigue that distinguished its members, and elevated the body itself to a height of power. It was a fundamental maxim with the Jesuits, from their first institution, not to publish the rules of their order. They kept concealed as an impenetrable mystery. They never communicated them to strangers, nor even to the greater part of their own members. They refused to produce them when required by courts of justice<sup>b</sup> ; and by a solecism in policy, the civil power in different countries authorised or connived at the establishment of an order of men, whose constitution and laws were concealed with a solicitude which alone was a good reason for excluding them. During the prosecutions lately carried on against them in Portugal and France, the Jesuits have been so inconsiderate as to produce the mystic volumes of their institute. By the aid of

<sup>b</sup> *Hist. des Jes. tom. iii. 236, &c. Compte par Chalot, p. 38.*

authentic records, the principles of their government may be delineated, and the sources of their power investigated with a degree of certainty and precision, which, previous to that event, it was impossible to attain<sup>c</sup>. But as I have pointed out the dangerous tendency of the constitution and spirit of the order with the freedom becoming an historian, the candour and impartiality no less requisite in that character call on me to add one observation, that no class of regular clergy in the Romish church has been more eminent for decency, and even purity of manners, than the major part of the order of Jesuits<sup>d</sup>. The maxims of an intriguing, ambitious, interested policy, might influence those who governed the society, and might even corrupt the heart, and pervert the conduct of some individuals, while the greater number, engaged in literary pursuits, or employed in the functions of religion, was left to the guidance of those common principles which restrain men from vice, and excite them to what is becoming and laudable. The causes which occasioned the ruin of this mighty body, as well as the circumstances and effects with

<sup>c</sup> The greater part of my information concerning the government and laws of the order of Jesuits, I have derived from the reports of M. de Chalotais and M. de Monclar. I rest not my narrative, however, upon the authority even of these respectable magistrates and elegant writers, but upon innumerable passages which they have extracted from the constitutions of the order deposited in their hands. Hospinian, a protestant divine of Zurich, in his *Historia Jesuitica*, printed A.D. 1619, published a small part of the constitutions of the Jesuits, of which by some accident he had got a copy;  
p. 13—54.

<sup>d</sup> *Sur la Destruct. des Jcs. par M. d'Alembert*, p. 55.

which it has been attended in the different countries of Europe, though objects extremely worthy the attention of every intelligent observer of human affairs, do not fall within the period of this history.

No sooner had Charles re-established order in the Low-Countries, than he was obliged to turn his attention to the affairs in Germany. The protestants pressed him earnestly to appoint that conference between a select number of the divines of each party, which had been stipulated in the convention at Francfort. The pope considered such an attempt to examine into the points in dispute, or to decide concerning them, as derogatory to his right of being the supreme judge in controversy; and being convinced that such a conference would either be ineffectual by determining nothing, or prove dangerous by determining too much, he employed every art to prevent it. The emperor, however, finding it more for his interest to sooth the Germans than to gratify Paul, paid little regard to his remonstrances. In a diet held at Haguenaw [June 25], matters were ripened for the conference. In another diet assembled at Worms [Dec. 26], the conference was begun, Melancthon on the one side and Eckius on the other sustaining the principal part in the dispute; but after they had made some progress, though without concluding any thing, it was suspended by the emperor's command, that it might be renewed with greater solemnity in his own presence in a diet summoned to meet at Ratisbon. [1541] This assembly was opened with great pomp, and with a general expectation that its proceedings

ings would be vigorous and decisive. In consent of both parties, the emperor was endued with the power of nominating the person who should manage the conference, which was agreed should be conducted not in the form of a public disputation, but as a friendly discussion or examination into the articles which gave rise to the present controversies. He selected Eckius, Gropper, and Pflug, on the side of the catholics; Melancthon, Bucer, and others, on that of the protestants; all men of distinguished reputation among their own adherents, and, except Eckius, all eminent for moderation, as well as desirous of peace. As they were about to begin their consultations, the emperor put into their hands a book, composed, as was said, by a learned divine in the Low-Countries, which, by its extraordinary perspicuity and temper, in his opinion, might go far to unite and reconcile the two contending parties. Gropper, canon of Cologne, whom he had named one of the managers of the conference, a man of talents as well as of erudition, was afterwards found to be the author of this short treatise. He maintained positions with regard to twenty-two chief articles in theology, which included the questions then agitated in the controversy between the Lutherans and the church of Rome.

By ranging his sentiments in a natural and expressing them with great simplicity; by employing often the very words of scripture, and of the primitive fathers; by softening the rigour of his *opinions*, and explaining away what was *objectionable* to others; by concessions, sometimes on one side, and sometimes on the other; and especially



minate religious diffentions e.

But the attention of the age was turned to such acute observation, towards theological controversies, that it was not easy to impose any gloss, how artful or specious for length and eagerness of the dispute had the contending parties so completely set their minds at such variance, that not to be reconciled by partial concessions the zealous catholics, particularly the emperor who had a seat in the diet, joined in condemning Gropper's treatise as too favourable to theutheran opinion, the poison of which was conveyed, as they pretended, with great subtlety because it was in some degree disguised to rigid protestants, especially Luther his patron the elector of Saxony, who reprobated it as an impious compound of

even alterations with regard to speculations, the discussion whereof is controverted in schools, and which present nothing that either strikes their imagination or senses, they came to an accommodation these without much labour, and even a great article concerning justification and mutual satisfaction. But, when they came to points of jurisdiction, where the authority of the Roman see were superior to the rites and forms of external worship, every change that could be made was rejected, and drew the observation of the emperor, that the catholics were altogether unprepared to abolish the church either with safety or without abolishing its ancient institutions. The articles relative to the power of the pope, the authority of councils, the administration of the sacraments, the worship of saints, and many others, did not, in their nature, admit of compromise; so that after labouring about an accommodation with respect to these, the emperor found all his endeavours unsuccessful. Being impatient, however, to settle the matter, he at last prevailed on a majority of the electors to approve of the following articles [8]: "That the articles concerning the sacraments had agreed in the council of Trent should be held as points decided, and inviolably by all; that the other articles, in which they had differed, should be referred to the determination of a general council, that could not be obtained, to assemble at Worms; and if it should be impossible, likewise, to assemble at any

that a general diet of the empire should be called within eighteen months, in order to give some final judgment upon the whole controversy; that the emperor should use all his interest and authority with the pope, to procure the meeting either of a general council or synod; that, in the mean time, no innovations should be attempted, no endeavours should be employed to gain profelytes; and neither the revenues of the church, nor the rights of monasteries, should be invaded f."

All the proceedings of this diet, as well as the recess in which they terminated, gave great offence to the pope. The power which the Germans had assumed of appointing their own divines to examine and determine matters of controversy, he considered as a very dangerous invasion of his rights; the renewing of their ancient proposal concerning a national synod, which had been so often rejected by him and his predecessors, appeared extremely undutiful; but the bare mention of allowing a diet, composed chiefly of laymen, to pass judgment with respect to articles of faith, was deemed no less criminal and profane than the worst of those heresies which they seemed zealous to suppress. On the other hand, the protestants were no less dissatisfied with a recess, that considerably abridged the liberty which they enjoyed at that time. As they murmured loudly against it, Charles, unwilling to leave any seeds of discontent in the empire, granted them a private declaration in the most ample terms, ex-

f Sleidan, 267, &c. Pallav. l. iv. c. 11. p. 136. F. Paul, p. 86. Seekend. l. iii. 256.

empting them from whatever they thought oppressive or injurious in the recess, and ascertaining to them the full possession of all the privileges which they had ever enjoyed &c.

Extraordinary as these concessions may appear, the situation of the emperor's affairs at this juncture made it necessary for him to grant them. He foresaw a rupture with France to be not only unavoidable, but near at hand, and durst not give any such cause of disgust or fear to the protestants, as might force them, in self-defence, to court the protection of the French king, from whom, at present, they were much alienated. The rapid progress of the Turks in Hungary was a more powerful and urgent motive to that moderation which Charles discovered. A great revolution had happened in that kingdom; John Zápolya Scæpus having chosen, as has been related, rather to possess a tributary kingdom, than to renounce the royal dignity to which he had been accustomed, had, by the assistance of his mighty protector Solymán, wrested from Ferdinand a great part of the country, and left him only the precarious possession of the rest. But being a prince of pacific qualities, the frequent attempts of Ferdinand, or of his partisans among the Hungarians, to recover what they had lost, greatly disquieted him; and the necessity on these occasions, of calling in the Turks, whom he considered and felt to be his masters rather than auxiliaries, was hardly less mortifying. In order, therefore, to avoid these distresses, as well as to

*See Sleid. 283. Seckend. 365. Dament Corps Diplom.  
in P. II. p. 210.*

secure quiet and leisure for cultivating the arts and enjoying amusements in which he delighted, he secretly came to an agreement with his competitor [A. D. 1535], on this condition ; That Ferdinand should acknowledge him as king of Hungary, and leave him, during life, the unmolested possession of that part of the kingdom now in his power ; but that, upon his demise, the sole right of the whole should devolve upon Ferdinand <sup>h</sup>. As John had never been married, and was then far advanced in life, the terms of the contract seemed very favourable to Ferdinand. But, soon after, some of the Hungarian nobles, solicitous to prevent a foreigner from ascending their throne, prevailed on John to put an end to a long celibacy, by marrying Isabella, the daughter of Sigismund king of Poland. John had the satisfaction, before his death, which happened within less than a year after his marriage, to see a son born to inherit his kingdom. To him, without regarding his treaty with Ferdinand, which he considered, no doubt, as void, upon an event not foreseen when it was concluded, he bequeathed his crown ; appointing the queen and George Martinuzzi, bishop of Waradin, guardians of his son, and regents of the kingdom. The greater part of the Hungarians immediately acknowledged the young prince as king, to whom, in memory of the founder of their monarchy, they gave the name of Stephen <sup>i</sup>.

Ferdinand, though extremely disconcerted by this unexpected event, resolved not to abandon

<sup>h</sup> Istvanhaffi Hist. Hung. lib. xii. p. 135.

<sup>i</sup> Jovii Hist. lib. xxxix. p. 239, a. &c.

kingdom which he flattered himself with  
g acquired by his compact with John. He  
mbassadors to the queen to claim possession,  
o offer the province of Transylvania as a  
nent for her son, preparing at the same  
to assert his right by force of arms. But  
had committed the care of his son to per-  
who had too much spirit to give up the  
tamely, and who possessed abilities suffi-  
to defend it. The queen, to all the address  
ar to her own sex, added a masculine  
ge, ambition, and magnanimity. Marti-  
, who had raised himself from the lowest  
in life to his present dignity, was one of  
extraordinary men, who, by the extent as  
variety of their talents, are fitted to act  
rior part in bustling and factious times.  
charging the functions of his ecclesiastical  
he put on the semblance of an humble and  
sanctity. In civil transactions, he disco-  
industry, dexterity, and boldness. During  
ae laid aside the cassock, and appeared on  
back with his scymetar and buckler, as  
as ostentatious, and as gallant as any of  
antrymen. Amidst all these different and  
dictory forms which he could assume, an  
ble desire of dominion and authority was  
cucus. From such persons it was obvious  
nswer Ferdinand had to expect. He soon  
ed that he must depend on arms alone for  
ring Hungary. Having levied for this  
e a considerable body of Germans, whom  
tians among the Hungarians joined with  
ssals, he ordered them to march into that  
the kingdom which adhered to Stephen.

Martinuzzi, unable to make head against a powerful army in the field, satisfied himself by holding out the towns, all of which, except Buda, the place of greatest consequence, were provided with every thing necessary for defence, and in the mean time he sent ambassadors to the emperor, beseeching him to extend toward Hungary the same imperial protection which had maintained the father on his throne. Ferdinand, though he used his utmost efforts to thwart this negotiation, and even refused to accept of the Hungarian crown on any ignominious condition, of paying tribute to the Ottoman Porte, by which John had been enabled to purchase such prospects of advantage from the Ottoman interest of the young king, that he had promised him his protection; and when he saw one army to advance forthwith toward Hungary, he himself followed with another. While the Germans, hoping to terminate the war by the reduction of a city in which the king and his mother were shut up, had formed a siege of Buda. Martinuzzi, having drawn together the strength of the Hungarian nobility, defended the town with such courage and skill, as delayed the Turkish forces time to come up for relief. They instantly attacked the city, which was weakened by fatigue, diseases, and desertion, and defeated them with great slaughter <sup>k</sup>.

Solyman soon after joined his veteran troops, and being weary of so many unsuccessful expeditions undertaken in defence of Hungary, which were not his own, or being u

<sup>k</sup> Istvanbassi Hist. Hung. lib. xiv. p.

is alluring opportunity of seizing a kingdom, possessed by an infant, under the guardianship of a woman and a priest, he allowed interested factions to triumph with too much facility over the principles of honour and the sentiments of humanity. What he planned ungenerously, he executed by fraud. Having prevailed on the queen to send her son, whom he pretended to be desirous of seeing, into his camp, and having, at the same time, invited the chief of the nobility to an entertainment there, while they, suspecting nothing, gave themselves up to the mirth and gaiety of the feast, a select band of troops, on the sultan's orders seized one of the gates of the city.

Being thus master of the capital, of the person, and of the leading men among the nobles, he gave orders to conduct the queen, together with her son, to Transylvania, which province was allotted to them, and appointing a governor to preside in Buda with a large body of troops, he annexed Hungary to the Ottoman empire. The tears and complaints of the unhappy queen had no influence to change his purpose, nor could old Martinuzzi either resist his absolute and uncontrollable command, or prevail on him to desist from it.

According to the account of this violent usurpation of Ferdinand, he was so unlucky as to have neglected to send other ambassadors to Solyman with a presentation of his right to the crown of Hungary, as well as a renewal of his former request to hold the kingdom of the Ottoman

*Shahfi Hist. Hung. lib. xiv. p. 56. Jovii Histor. p. 2476, &c.*

Port



unbecoming his own dignity, declared would not suspend the operations of war. Ferdinand instantly evacuated all the towns he still held in Hungary, and consented to the imposition of a tribute upon Austria, to reimburse the sums which his previous invasion of Hungary had obliged the Porte to expend in defence of that kingdom.

In this state were the affairs of Hungary, when the unfortunate events there had either been decided, or were to be decided, before the dissolution of the diet at Ratibor. Charles saw that the state of irritation and inflammation of the minds of the Hungarians, while a formidable enemy was about to break into the empire; and perceived that he could not expect any vigorous assistance towards the recovery of Hungary, or the security of the Austrian frontier, unless he could first satisfy the protestants. By the concessions which have been mentioned, he gained time, and such liberal supplies both of men and

; but nothing could be concluded concerning the proper method of composing the disputes in Germany, between two whose views and interests with regard to the matter were at this juncture so opposite. Charles's endeavours to remove the causes of contention between Charles and Francis, and to extinguish those mutual animosities which threatened to break out suddenly into open hostility, were more successful.

The emperor's thoughts were bent so entirely, at this time, on the great enterprise which he had concerted against Algiers, that he bestowed little attention to the pope's schemes and intrigues, and hastened to join his army and

which was still continued in that state of dependence on the Turkish empire to which Barbarossa subjected it. Ever since he, as Captain-General, commanded the Ottoman fleet, Algiers had been governed by Hascen-Aga, a renegade who, by passing through every station of a corsair's service, had acquired such experience in war, that he was well fitted for a station which required a man of tried and daring courage.

In order to shew how well he deserved his title, he carried on his piratical depredations on the Christian states with amazing activity, and did, if possible, Barbarossa himself in excess of violence and cruelty. The commerce of the Mediterranean was greatly interrupted by his operations, and such frequent alarms given to the coast of Spain, that there was a necessity of

<sup>o</sup> Sandov. Histor. tom. ii. 298.

erecting watch-towers at proper distances, and of keeping guards constantly on foot, in order to descry the approach of his squadrons, and to protect the inhabitants from their descents<sup>r</sup>. Of this the emperor had received repeated and clamorous complaints from his subjects, who represented it as an enterprise corresponding to his power, and becoming his humanity, to reduce Algiers, which, since the conquest of Tunis, was the common receptacle of all the free-booters; and to exterminate that lawless race, the implacable enemies of the Christian name. Moved partly by their entreaties, and partly allured by the hope of adding to the glory which he had acquired by his last expedition into Africa, Charles, before he left Madrid in his way to the Low-Countries, had issued orders both in Spain and Italy, to prepare a fleet and army for this purpose. No change in circumstances, since that time, could divert him from this resolution, or prevail on him to turn his arms towards Hungary; though the success of the Turks in that country seemed more immediately to require his presence there; though many of his most faithful adherents in Germany urged that the defence of the empire ought to be his first and peculiar care; though such as bore him no good-will ridiculed his preposterous conduct in flying from an enemy almost at hand, that he might go in quest of a remote and more ignoble foe. But to attack the sultan in Hungary, how splendid soever that measure might appear, was an undertaking which exceeded his

r, and was not consistent with his interest. To draw troops out of Spain or Italy, to march into a country so distant as Hungary, to de the vast apparatus necessary for transporting thither the artillery, ammunition, and age of a regular army, and to push the war it quarter, where there was little prospect inging it to an issue during several campaigns, were undertakings so expensive and un- as did not correspond with the low con- of the emperor's treasury. While his pal force was thus employed, his dominions ly and the Low-Countries must have lain to the French king, who would not have ed such a favourable opportunity of attacking them to go unimproved. Whereas the an expedition, the preparations for which already finished, and almost the whole ex- of it defrayed, would depend upon a effort; and besides the security and satisf- a which the success of it must give his ts, would detain him during so short a that Francis could hardly take advantage of his absence, to invade his dominions in ie.

all these accounts, Charles adhered to his plan, and with such determined obstinacy, e paid no regard to the pope, who advised, Andrew Doria, who conjured him not to : his whole armament to almost unavoidable stion, by venturing to approach the dan- : coast of Algiers at such an advanced sea- the year, and when the autumnal winds : violent. Having embarked on board gallics at Porto-Venere in the Genoese  
ter

territories, he soon found that this experienced sailor had not judged wrong concerning the element with which he was so well acquainted; for such a storm arose, that it was with the utmost difficulty and danger he reached Sardinia, the place of general rendezvous. But as his courage was undaunted, and his temper often inflexible, neither the renewed remonstrances of the pope and Doria, nor the danger to which he had already been exposed by disregarding their advice, had any other effect than to confirm him in his fatal resolution. The force, indeed, which he had collected, was such as might have inspired a prince less adventurous, and less confident in his own schemes, with the most sanguine hopes of success. It consisted of twenty thousand foot, and two thousand horse, Spaniards, Italians, and Germans, mostly veterans, together with three thousand volunteers, the flower of the Spanish and Italian nobility, fond of paying court to the emperor by attending him in his favourite expedition, and eager to share in the glory which they believed he was going to reap; to these were added a thousand soldiers sent from Malta by the order of St. John, led by an hundred of its most gallant knights.

The voyage, from Majorca to the African coast, was not less tedious, or full of hazard, than that which he had just finished. When he approached the land, the roll of the sea, and vehemence of the winds, would not permit the troops to disembark. But at last, the emperor, seizing a favourable opportunity, landed them without opposition, not far from Algiers, and immediately advanced towards the town. T

ops

this mighty army, Hascen had only eight thousand Turks, and five thousand Moors, partly of Africa, and partly refugees from Persia. He returned, however, with a ready answer, when summoned to surrender. With such a handful of soldiers, neither his valour, nor consummate skill in war, could have long resisted forces superior to those

which had defeated Barbarossa at the head of fifty thousand men, and which had reduced Constantinople, in spite of all his endeavours to save it. How far soever the emperor might think himself beyond the reach of any danger from the East, he was suddenly exposed to a more dreadful calamity, and one against which human prudence and human efforts availed nothing. On the second day after his landing, and before he had time for any thing but to disperse some light-armed Arabs who molested his troops on their march, the clouds began to gather, and the winds began to appear with a fierce and threatening tempest. Towards evening, rain began to fall, accompanied with violent wind; and the rage of the tempest increasing, during the night, the soldiers, who had brought nothing ashore but their arms, remained exposed to all its fury, without tents, or shelter, or cover of any kind.

The ground was soon so wet that they could not march on it; their camp being in a low situation, was overflowed with water, and they sunk every step to the ankles in mud; while the wind blew with such impetuosity, that, to prevent their falling, they were obliged to thrust their spears into the ground, and to support themselves by taking hold of them. Hascen was

too vigilant an officer to allow an enemy in such distress to remain unmolested. About the dawn of morning, he sallied out with soldiers, who having been screened from the storm under their own roofs, were fresh and vigorous. A body of Italians, who were stationed nearest the city, dispirited and benumbed with cold, fled at the approach of the Turks. The troops at the post behind them discovered greater courage; but as the rain had extinguished their matches, and wetted their powder, their muskets were useless, and having scarcely strength to handle their other arms, they were soon thrown into confusion. Almost the whole army, with the emperor himself in person, was obliged to advance, before the enemy could be repulsed, who, after spreading such general consternation, and killing a considerable number of men, retired at last in good order.

But all feeling or remembrance of this loss and danger were quickly obliterated by a more dreadful as well as affecting spectacle. It was now broad day; the hurricane had abated nothing of its violence, and the sea appeared agitated with all the rage of which that destructive element is capable; all the ships, on which alone the whole army knew that their safety and subsistence depended, were seen driven from their anchors, some dashing against each other, some beat to pieces on the rocks, many forced ashore, and not a few sinking in the waves. In less than an hour, fifteen ships of war, and an hundred and forty transports with eight thousand men, perished; and such of the unhappy crews as escaped the fury of the sea, were murdered without

hout mercy by the Arabs, as soon as they shed land. The emperor stood in silent grief and astonishment beholding this fatal event, which at once blasted all his hopes of success, and buried in the depths the vast stores which he had provided, as well for annoying the enemy, as for subsisting his own troops. He felt it not in his power to afford them any other assistance or relief than by sending some troops to drive away the Arabs, and thus delivering a few who were so fortunate as to get ashore from the cruel fate which their companions had met with. At last the wind began to fall, and to give some hopes that as many ships might escape as would be sufficient to save the army from perishing by famine, and transport them back to Europe. But these were only hopes; the approaching evening covered the sea with darkness; and it being impossible for the officers aboard the ships which had outlived the storm, to send any intelligence to their companions who were ashore, they remained during the night in all the anguish of suspense and uncertainty. Next day, a boat dispatched by Doria made shift to reach land, with information, that having weathered out the storm, to which, during fifty years knowledge of the sea, he had never seen any equal in fierceness and horror, he had found it necessary to draw away with his shattered ships to Cape Metafuz. He advised the emperor, as the face of the sky was still lowering and tempestuous, to march with all speed to that place, where the troops could re-embark with greater ease. Whatever comfort this intelligence afforded them, from being assured that part of



out with fatigue, were hardly able for march, even in a friendly country; and dispirited by a succession of hardships victory itself would scarcely have rendered able, they were in no condition to undertake. But the situation of the army as allowed not one moment for deliberation left it in the least doubtful what to do. They were ordered instantly to march the wounded, the sick, and the feeble being in the centre; such as seemed most fit were stationed in the front and rear. The sad effects of what they had suffered began to appear more manifestly than ever, and calamities were added to all those which they already endured. Some could hardly bear the weight of their arms; others, spent by the toil of forcing their way through almost impassable roads, sunk down and many perished by famine, as the whole

fuz : and the weather being now so calm as store their communication with the fleet, were supplied with plenty of provisions, and ed with the prospect of safety.

ring this dreadful series of calamities, the ror discovered great qualities, many of a long continued flow of prosperity had ly afforded him an opportunity of display-

He appeared conspicuous for firmness and ancy of spirit, for magnanimity, fortitude, nity, and compassion. He endured as great hips as the meanest soldier ; he exposed his person wherever danger threatened ; he engaged the desponding, visited the sick and ded, and animated all by his words and ple. When the army embarked, he was g the last who left the shore, although ly of Arabs hovered at no great distance, to fall on the rear. By these virtues, les atoned, in some degree, for his obstinacy resumption in undertaking an expedition so to his subjects.

ie calamities which attended this unfortunate prise did not end here ; for no sooner were orces got on board, than a new storm arif- though less furious than the former, scat- the fleet, and obliged them, separately, to towards such ports in Spain or Italy as could first reach ; thus spreading the ac- of their disasters, with all the circumstances gravation and horror, which their imagina- still under the influence of fear, suggested.

*emperor himself, after escaping great dan- and being forced into the port of Bugia in [Dec. 2], where he was obliged by con-*

trary winds to remain several weeks, arrived at last in Spain, in a condition very different from that in which he had returned from his former expedition against the infidels<sup>2</sup>.

---

## BOOK VII.

THE calamities which the emperor suffered in his unfortunate enterprize against Algiers were great; and the account of these, which augmented in proportion as it spread at a greater distance from the scene of his disasters, encouraged Francis to begin hostilities, on which he had been for some time resolved. But he did not think it prudent to produce, as the motives of this resolution, either his ancient pretensions to the dutchy of Milan, or the emperor's dissingenuity in violating his repeated promises with regard to the restitution of that country. The former might have been a good reason against concluding the truce of Nice, but was none for breaking it; the latter could not be urged without exposing his own credulity as much as the emperor's want of integrity. A violent and unwarrantable action of one of the Imperial generals furnished him with a reason to justify his

<sup>2</sup> Carol. V. Expeditio ad Argysiam, per Nicolaum Vil-lagnonem Equitem Rhodium, ap. Scardium, v. ii. 365. *Jovii Hist.* l. xl. p. 269, &c. Vera y Zuniga Vida de Carlos V. p. 83. Sandov. *Histor.* ii. 199, &c.

arms, which was of greater weight than of these, and such as would have roused him had been as desirous of peace as he eager for war. Francis, by signing the treaty of truce at Nice, without consulting the emperor, gave (as he foresaw) great offence to the mighty monarch, who considered an alliance with him as an honour of which a Christian prince had cause to be proud. The friendly interview of the French king with the emperor, followed by such extraordinary appearances of union and confidence which distinguished the reception of Charles when he passed through the dominions of Francis to the Low-lands, induced the sultan to suspect that his rivals had at last forgotten their ancient enmity, in order that they might form such a general confederacy against the Ottoman power, which had been long wished for in Christendom, and attempted in vain. Charles, with this view, endeavoured to confirm and strengthen the emperor's suspicions, by instructing his emissaries at Constantinople, as well as in those courts with which the emperor held any intelligence, to represent the concord between him and Francis to be precarious, that their sentiments, views, and pursuits would be the same for the future<sup>a</sup>. It was not without difficulty that Francis effaced these impressions; but the address of Rincon, the French ambassador at the Porte, together with the manifest advantage of carrying on hostilities against the house of Austria in concert with France, prevailed at length on the sultan

<sup>a</sup> *Mém. de Ribier*, tom. i. p. 502.

municate  
for gaining the conquest  
their operations against the  
Solyman having lately concluded a peace  
that republic, to which the mediation of France  
and the good offices of Rincon had greatly  
tributed, thought it not impossible to allure  
senate by such advantages, as, together with  
example of the French monarch, might  
balance any scruples arising either from  
or caution, that could operate on the  
Francis, warmly approving of this mea-  
sured Rincon back to Constantinople  
recting him to go by Venice along with  
a Genoese exile, whom he appointed  
bassador to that republic, empowered  
negotiate the matter with the senate  
Solyman had sent an envoy for the  
The marquis del Guasto,  
an officer of great

seized their papers. Upon receiving an account of this barbarous outrage, committed, against the subsistence of a truce, against persons sacred by the most uncivilized nations, Francis's grief for the unhappy fate of two servants whom he loved and trusted, his uneasiness at the interruption of his schemes by their death, and every other passion, were swallowed up and lost in the indignation which this insult on the honour of his crown excited. He exclaimed loudly against Guasto, who, having drawn upon himself all the infamy of assassination without making any discovery of importance, as the ambassadors had left their instructions and other papers of consequence behind them, now boldly denied his being accessory in any wise to the crime. He sent an ambassador to the emperor, to demand suitable reparation for an indignity, which no prince, how inconsiderable or pusillanimous soever, could tamely endure: and when Charles, impatient at that time to set out on his African expedition, endeavoured to put him off with an evasive answer, he appealed to all the courts in Europe, setting forth the heinousness of the injury, the spirit of moderation with which he had applied for redress, and the iniquity of the emperor in disregarding this just request.

Notwithstanding the confidence with which Guasto asserted his own innocence, the accusations of the French gained greater credit than all his protestations; and Bellay, the French commander in Piedmont, procured, at length, by his industry and address, such a minute detail of the transaction, with the testimony of

many of the parties concerned, as amounted almost to a legal proof of the marquis's guilt. In consequence of this opinion of the public, confirmed by such strong evidence, Francis's complaints were universally allowed to be well founded, and the steps which he took towards renewing hostilities, were ascribed not merely to ambition or resentment, but to the unavoidable necessity of vindicating the honour of his crown<sup>c</sup>.

However just Francis might esteem his own cause, he did not trust so much to that, as to neglect the proper precautions for gaining other allies besides the sultan, by whose aid he might counterbalance the emperor's superior power.

the emperor about the possession of Gueldres, were the only confederates whom Francis secured. But the dominions of the two former lay at such a distance, and the power of the latter was so inconsiderable, that he gained little by their alliance.

But Francis by vigorous efforts of his own activity supplied every defect. Being afflicted at this time with a distemper, which was the effect of his irregular pleasures, and which prevented his pursuing them with the same licentious indulgence, he applied to business with more than his usual industry. The same cause which occasioned this extraordinary attention to his affairs, rendered him morose and dissatisfied with the ministers whom he had hitherto employed. This accidental peevishness being sharpened by reflecting on the false steps into which he had lately been betrayed, as well as the insults to which he had been exposed, some of those in whom he had usually placed the greatest confidence felt the effects of this change in his temper, and were deprived of their offices. At last he disgraced Montmorency himself, who had long directed affairs as well civil as military, with all the authority of a minister no less beloved than trusted by his master; and Francis being fond of shewing that the fall of such a powerful favourite did not affect the vigour or prudence of his administration, this was a new motive to redouble his diligence in preparing to open the war by some splendid and extraordinary effort.

1542.] He accordingly brought into the field *re armies*. One to act in Luxembourg under



posed enemy of the troops of Savoy, a  
battalion allotted for the theatre of its o  
A fourth, of which the duke of Ven  
general, hovered on the borders of  
The last, consisting of the forces of  
Piedmont, was destined for the adm  
battalion. The Dauphin and his brother  
pointed to command where the chief  
were intended, and the greatest hon  
reaped; the army of the former am  
forty thousand, that of the latter to t  
thousand men. Nothing appears more surp  
that Francis did not pour with these  
and irresistible armies into the Milan  
had so long been the object of his wil  
as enterprises; and that he should ch  
to turn almost his whole strength into  
direction, and towards new conquests.  
remembrance of the disasters which h  
with in his former expeditions into I  
ther with the difficulty of supporting a

country of Roussillon, lately dismembered from the French crown, before Charles could bring into the field any force able to obstruct his progress. The necessity of supporting his ally the duke of Cleves, and the hope of drawing a considerable body of soldiers out of Germany by his means, determined him to act with vigour in the Low-Countries.

The Dauphin and duke of Orleans opened the campaign much about the same time [June]; the former laying siege to Perpignan the capital of Roussillon, and the latter entering Luxembourg. The duke of Orleans pushed his operations with the greatest rapidity and success, one town falling after another, until no place in that large dutchy remained in the emperor's hands but Thionville. Nor could he have failed of over-running the adjacent provinces with the same ease, if he had not voluntarily stopt short in this career of victory. But a report prevailing that the emperor had determined to hazard a battle in order to save Perpignan, on a sudden the duke, prompted by youthful ardour, or moved, perhaps, by jealousy of his brother, whom he both envied and hated, abandoned his own conquest, and hastened towards Roussillon, in order to divide with him the glory of the victory.

On his departure, some of his troops were disbanded, others deserted their colours, and the rest, cantoned in the towns which he had taken, remained inactive. By this conduct, which leaves a dishonourable imputation either on his understanding or his heart, or on both, he not only renounced whatever he could have hoped for

such a promising commencement of the but gave the enemy an opportunity of ing, before the end of summer, all the which he had gained. On the Spani the emperor was not so inconsiderate ture on a battle, the loss of which r endangered his kingdom. Perpignan poorly fortified, and briskly attack been largely supplied with ammunitio visions by the vigilance of Doria<sup>d</sup>, w so long and so vigorously by the dul the persevering obstinacy of whose t him admirably for such a service, tha French, after a siege of three months diseases, repulsed in several assaults, a

tion, tried every expedient, and turned themselves towards every quarter, in order to acquire new allies, together with such a reinforcement of strength as would give them the superiority in the ensuing campaign. Charles, taking advantage of the terror and resentment of the Spaniards, upon the sudden invasion of their country, prevailed on the Cortes of the several kingdoms to grant him subsidies with a more liberal hand than usual. At the same time he borrowed a large sum from John king of Portugal, and, by way of security for his repayment, put him in possession of the Molucca isles in the East Indies, with the gainful commerce of precious spices, which that sequestered corner of the globe yields. Not satisfied with this, he negotiated a marriage between Philip his only son, now in his sixteenth year, and Mary daughter of that monarch, with whom her father, the most opulent prince in Europe, gave a large dower; and having likewise persuaded the Cortes of Aragon and Valencia to recognise Philip as the heir of these crowns, he obtained from them the donative usual on such occasions<sup>s</sup>. These extraordinary supplies enabled him to make such additions to his forces in Spain that he could detach a great body into the Low-Countries, and yet reserve as many as were sufficient for the defence of the kingdom. Having thus provided for the security of Spain, and committed the government of it to his son, he sailed for Italy [May], in his way to Germany. But how attentive soever to raise the funds for carrying on the war, or eager to grasp

<sup>s</sup> *Ferreras*, ix. 238. 247. *Jovii Hist. lib. xlii. 298.*

opportunities of aggrandizing his family him to grant Octavio his grandchild, the emperor had admitted to the honour of son-in-law, the investiture of the dutchy in return for which he promised such money as would have gone far towards meeting all his present exigencies. But Clavello well from unwillingness to alienate a possession of so much value, as from disgust at the pope, who had hitherto refused to join in the war against Francis, rejected the proposal. His disposition with Paul at that juncture was so good, that he even refused to approve his alienation of Sicily and Placentia from the patrimony of the Holy See, and settling them on his son and grandchild, to be held of the holy see. As no other expedient for raising money among the Italian states remained, he consented to withdraw his garrisons which he had hitherto kept in the citadels of Florence and Leghorn ; in consideration for which he received a large sum of

cessary for defraying the expences of the year, had not been negligent of objects more distant, though no less important, and had concluded a league offensive and defensive with Henry VIII. from which he derived, in the end, greater advantage than from all his other preparations. Several slight circumstances which have already been mentioned, had begun to alienate the affections of that monarch from Francis, with whom he had been for some time in close alliance ; and new incidents of greater moment had occurred to increase his disgust and animosity. Henry, desirous of establishing an uniformity in religion in both the British kingdoms, as well as fond of making proselytes to his own opinions, had formed a scheme of persuading his nephew the king of Scots to renounce the pope's supremacy, and to adopt the same system of reformation, which he had introduced into England. This measure he pursued with his usual eagerness and impetuosity, making such advantageous offers to James, whom he considered as not over-scrupulously attached to any religious tenets, that he hardly doubted of success. His propositions were accordingly received in such a manner, that he flattered himself with having gained his point. But the Scottish ecclesiastics, foreseeing how fatal the union of their sovereign with England must prove both to their own power, and to the established system of religion ; and the partisans of France, no less convinced that it would put an end to the influence of that crown upon the public councils of Scotland ; combined together, and by their insinuations defeated Henry's scheme at the very moment whe

he expected it to have taken effect<sup>1</sup>. Too haughty to brook such a disappointment, which he imputed as much to the arts of the French, as to the levity of the Scottish monarch, he took arms against Scotland, threatening to subdue the kingdom, since he could not gain the friendship of its king. At the same time, his resentment against Francis quickened his negotiations with the emperor, an alliance with whom he was now as forward to accept as the other could be to offer it. During this war with Scotland, and before the conclusion of his negotiations with Charles, James V. died, leaving his crown to Mary his only daughter, an infant a few days old. Upon this event, Henry altered at once his whole system with regard to Scotland, and abandoning all thoughts of conquering it, aimed at what was more advantageous as well as more practicable, an union with that kingdom by a marriage between Edward his only son and the young queen. But here, too, he apprehended a vigorous opposition from the French faction in Scotland, which began to bestir itself in order to thwart the measure. The necessity of crushing this party among the Scots, and of preventing Francis from furnishing them any effectual aid, confirmed Henry's resolution of breaking with France, and pushed him on to put a finishing hand to the treaty of confederacy with the emperor.

In this league [Feb. 11] were contained first of all, articles for securing their future amity and mutual defence; then were enumerated the de-

<sup>1</sup> *Hist. of Scotl.* vol. i. p. 71, &c. 9th edit. 8vo.

hands which they were respectively to make upon Francis ; and the plan of their operations was fixed, if he should refuse to grant them satisfaction. They agreed to require that Francis should not only renounce his alliance with Solyman, which had been the source of infinite calamities to Christendom, but also that he should make reparation for the damages which that unnatural union had occasioned ; that he should restore Burgundy to the emperor, that he should desist immediately from hostilities, and leave Charles at leisure to oppose the common enemy of the Christian faith ; and that he should immediately pay the sums due to Henry, or put some towns in his hands as security to that effect. If, within forty days, he did not comply with these demands, they then engaged to invade France each with twenty thousand foot and five thousand horse, and not to lay down their arms until they had recovered Burgundy, together with the towns on the Somme, for the emperor, and Normandy and Guienne, or even the whole realm of France, for Henry \*. Their heralds, accordingly, set out with these haughty requisitions ; and though they were not permitted to enter France, the two monarchs held themselves fully entitled to execute whatever was stipulated in their treaty.

Francis, on his part, was not less diligent in preparing for the approaching campaign. Having early observed symptoms of Henry's disgust and alienation, and finding all his endeavours to soothe and reconcile him ineffectual, he knew his temper too well not to expect that open hostilities

\* *Rym. xiv. 768. Herb. 238.*



would quickly follow upon this cessation of friendship. For this reason he redoubled his endeavours to obtain from Solyman such aid as might counterbalance the great accession of strength which the emperor would receive by his alliance with England. In order to supply the place of the two ambassadors who had been murdered by Guasto, he sent as his envoy, first to Venice, and then to Constantinople, Paulin, who, though in no higher rank than a captain of foot, was deemed worthy of being raised to this important station, to which he was recommended by Bellay, who had trained him to the arts of negotiation, and made trial of his talents and address on several occasions. Nor did he belie the opinion conceived of his courage and abilities. Hastening to Constantinople, without regarding the dangers to which he was exposed, he urged his master's demands with such boldness, and availed himself of every circumstance with such dexterity, that he soon removed all the sultan's difficulties. As some of the bashaws, swayed either by their own opinion, or influenced by the emperor's emissaries, who had made their way even into this court, had declared in the divan against acting in concert with France, he found means either to convince or silence them<sup>k</sup>. At last he obtained orders for Barbarossa to sail with a powerful fleet, and to regulate all his operations by the directions of the French king. Francis was not equally successful in his attempts to gain the princes of the empire. The extraordinary rigour

<sup>k</sup> Sandov. Histor. tom. ii. 346. Jovii Hist. lib. xii.  
285, &c. 300, &c. Erantome.

with which he thought it necessary to punish such of his subjects as had embraced the protestant opinions, in order to give some notable evidence of his own zeal for the catholic faith, and to wipe off the imputations to which he was liable from his confederacy with the Turks, placed an insuperable barrier between him and such of the Germans as interest or inclination would have prompted most readily to join him<sup>1</sup>. His chief advantage, however, over the emperor, he derived on this, as on other occasions, from the contiguity of his dominions, as well as from the extent of the royal authority in France, which exempted him from all the delays and disappointments unavoidable wherever popular assemblies provide for the expences of government by occasional and frugal subsidies. Hence his domestic preparations were always carried on with vigour and rapidity, while those of the emperor, unless when quickened by some foreign supply, or some temporary expedient, were extremely slow and dilatory.

Long before any army was in readiness to oppose him, Francis took the field in the Low-Countries, against which he turned the whole weight of the war. He made himself master of Landrecy, which he determined to keep as the key to the whole province of Hainault; and ordered it to be fortified with great care. Turning from thence to the right, he entered the dutchy of Luxembourg, and found it in the same defenceless state as in the former year. While he was thus employed, the emperor, having

<sup>1</sup> Seck. lib. iii. 403.

own together an army, composed of all the different nations subject to his government, entered the territories of the duke of Cleves, from whom he had vowed to inflict exemplary vengeance. This prince, whose conduct and situation were similar to that of Robert de la Marck, in the first war between Charles and Francis, resembled him likewise in his fate. Unable, with his feeble army, to face the emperor, who advanced at the head of forty-four thousand men, he retired at his approach; and the Imperialists, being at liberty to act as they pleased, immediately invested Duren. That town, though gallantly defended, was taken by assault; all the inhabitants were put to the sword, and the place itself reduced to ashes. This dreadful example of severity struck the people of the country with such general terror, that all the other towns, even such as were capable of resistance, surrendered their keys to the emperor [August 24]; and before a body of French, detached to his assistance could come up, the duke himself was obliged to make his submission to Charles in the most abject manner. Being admitted into the imperial presence, he kneeled, together with most of his principal subjects, and implored pardon. The emperor allowed him to remain in this abject posture, and eyeing him with a haughty and severe look, without deigning to answer a single word, remitted him to his misfortunes. The conditions, however, which were prescribed were not so rigorous as he had to have expected after such a receipt. He was obliged [Sept. 7] to renounce his alliance with France and Denmark; to ref

to the dutchy of Gueldres ; to eternal amity with the emperor and king of Romans. In return for which, all his dominions were restored, except two which the emperor kept as pledges of the fidelity during the continuance of the peace. He was reinstated in his privileges as emperor of the empire. Not long after, Charles, in token of the sincerity of his reconciliation, gave in marriage one of the daughters of his son Ferdinand <sup>III</sup>.

He thus chastised the presumption of the French, detached one of his allies from them, and annexed to his own dominions in the Low Countries a considerable province which was very important to them, Charles advanced towards Landrecy and laid siege to Landrecy. There, as the fruits of his alliance with Henry, he was aided by six thousand English under sir Thomas Klop. The garrison, consisting of veterans commanded by De la Lande and other officers of reputation, made a vigorous defence. Francis approached with all his forces to relieve that place ; Charles covered the French, who were determined to hazard an engagement ; and all Europe expected to see the result of which had continued so long, decided by a battle between two great armies led by respective monarchs in person. But the treaty which separated their two camps was put the disadvantage manifestly on his side, should he venture to attack, and neither

them chose to run that risque. Amidst a variety of movements in order to draw the enemy to the snare, or to avoid it themselves, Francis, with admirable conduct and equal good fortune, drew first a supply of fresh troops, and then a convoy of provisions, into the town, so that the emperor, despairing of success, withdrew into winter-quarters<sup>n</sup>, in order to preserve his army from being entirely ruined by the rigour of the season.

During this campaign, Solyman fulfilled his engagements to the French king with great punctuality. He himself marched into Hungary with a numerous army [November] ; and as the princes of the empire made no great effort to save a country which Charles, by employing his own force against Francis, seemed willing to sacrifice, there was no appearance of any body of troops to oppose his progress. He besieged one after another, *Quinque Ecclesiæ*, *Alba*, and *Gran*, the three most considerable towns in the kingdom, of which Ferdinand had kept possession. The first was taken by storm ; the other surrendered ; and the whole kingdom, a corner excepted, was subjected to the Turkish yoke<sup>o</sup>. About the same time, *Barbarossa* with a fleet of an hundred and ten galleys coasting along the shore of Calabria, made descent at *Rheggio*, which he plundered, burnt ; and advancing from thence to the mouth of the *Tiber*, he stopt there to water. The citizens of *Rome*, ignorant of his destination

<sup>n</sup> Bellay, 405, &c.

<sup>o</sup> *Istuanhaff. Histor. Hung.* l. xv. 167.

with terror, began to fly with such general  
tation, that the city would have been to-  
sented, if they had not resumed courage  
etters from Paulin the French envoy,  
; them that no violence or injury would  
red by the Turks to any state in alliance  
ie king his master P. From Ostia, Bar-  
ailed to Marseilles, and being joined by  
ench fleet with a body of land forces on  
under the count d'Enguien, a gallant  
prince of the house of Bourbon, they di-  
their course towards Nice, the sole retreat  
unfortunate duke of Savoy [August 10].

to the astonishment and scandal of all  
ndom, the lilies of France and crescent of  
et appeared in conjunction against a for-  
n which the cross of Savoy was displayed.  
wn, however, was bravely defended against  
ombined force by Montfort a Savoyard  
an, who stood a general assault, and re-  
the enemy with great loss before he retired  
e castle. That fort, situated upon a rock,  
ch the artillery made no impression, and  
could not be undermined, he held out so  
hat Doria had time to approach with his  
id the marquis del Guasto to march with  
of troops from Milan. Upon intelligence  
the French and Turks raised the siege  
8] 9; and Francis had not even the con-  
of success, to render the infamy which  
on himself, by calling in such an auxi-  
more pardonable.

*Hist. l. xliii. 304, &c. Pallavic. 160.  
renon Histoire de Savoye, t. i. p. 651. Bellay*

From the small progress of either party during this campaign, it was obvious to what a length the war might be drawn out between two princes, whose power was so equally balanced, and who, by their own talents or activity, could so vary and multiply their resources. The trial which they had now made of each other's strength might have taught them the imprudence of persisting in a war, wherein there was greater appearance of their distressing their own dominions than of conquering those of their adversary, and should have disposed both to wish for peace. If Charles and Francis had been influenced by considerations of interest or prudence alone, this, without doubt, must have been the manner in which they would have reasoned. But the personal animosity, which mingled itself in all their quarrels, had grown to be so violent and implacable, that, for the pleasure of gratifying it, they disregarded every thing else; and were infinitely more solicitous how to hurt each other, than how to secure what would be of advantage to themselves. No sooner then did the season force them to suspend hostilities, than, without paying any attention to the pope's repeated endeavours or paternal exhortations to re-establish peace, they began to provide for the operations of the next year with new vigour, and an activity increasing with their hatred. Charles turned his chief attention towards gaining the princes of the empire, and endeavoured to rouse the formidable but unwieldy strength of the Germanic body against Francis. In order to understand the propriety of the steps which he took for that purpose, it is necessary to review the chief transac-

ti

tions in that country since the diet of Ratisbon in the year one thousand five hundred and forty-one.

Much about the time that assembly broke up, Maurice succeeded his father Henry in the government of that part of Saxony which belonged to the Albertine branch of the Saxon family. This young prince, then only in his twentieth year, had, even at that early period, begun to discover the great talents which qualified him for acting such a distinguished part in the affairs of Germany. As soon as he entered upon the administration, he struck out into such a new and singular path, as shewed that he aimed, from the beginning, at something great and uncommon. Though zealously attached to the protestant opinions, both from education and principle, he refused to accede to the league of Smalkalde, being determined, as he said, to maintain the purity of religion, which was the original object of that confederacy, but not to entangle himself in the political interests or combinations to which it had given rise. At the same time, foreseeing a rupture between Charles and the confederates of Smalkalde, and perceiving which of them was most likely to prevail in the contest, instead of that jealousy and distrust which the other protestants expressed of all the emperor's designs, he affected to place him in an unbounded confidence; and courted his favour with the utmost assiduity. When the other protestants in the year fifteen hundred and forty-two, either declined assisting Ferdinand in Hungary, or afforded him *reluctant and feeble aid*, Maurice marched *thither in person*, and rendered himself conspicu-



ous by his zeal and courage. From motive, he had led to the emperor's during the last campaign, a body of troops; and the gracefulness of his p dexterity in all military exercises, tog his intrepidity, which courted and d danger, did not distinguish him more i than his great abilities and insinuatii won upon the emperor's confidence an While by this conduct, which appear dinary to those who held the same op him concerning religion, Maurice ende pay court to the emperor, he began some degree of jealousy of his cousin of Saxony. This, which proved in th

suspected, to summon a general council, that he found it impossible to avoid any longer calling that assembly. The impatience for its meeting, and the expectations of great effects from its decisions, seemed to grow in proportion to the difficulty of obtaining it. He still adhered, however, to his original resolution of holding it in some town of Italy, where, by the number of ecclesiastics, retainers to his court, and depending on his favour, who could repair to it without difficulty or expence, he might influence and even direct all its proceedings. This proposition, though often rejected by the Germans, he instructed his nuncio to the diet held at Spire [March 3], in the year one thousand five hundred and forty-two, to renew once more; and if he found it gave no greater satisfaction than formerly, he empowered him, as a last concession, to propose for the place of meeting, Trent, a city in the Tyrol, subject to the king of the Romans, and situated on the confines between Germany and Italy. The catholic princes in the diet, after giving it as their opinion that the council might have been held with greater advantage in Ratisbon, Cologne, or some of the great cities of the empire, were at length induced to approve of the place which the pope had named. The protestants unanimously expressed their dissatisfaction, and protested that they would pay no regard to a council held beyond the precincts of the empire, called by the pope's authority, and in which he assumed the right of *presiding* <sup>t</sup>.

<sup>t</sup> *Sleid.* 291. *Seck.* l.iii 283.

The pope, without taking any notice of the objections, published the bull of intimation [May 22, 1542], named three cardinals to preside as his legates, and appointed them to repair to Trent before the first of November, the day he had fixed for opening the council. But Paul had desired the meeting of a council sincerely as he pretended, he would not have pitched on such an improper time for calling it. Instead of that general union and tranquillity without which the deliberations of a council could neither be conducted with security, nor attended with authority, such a fierce war was just kindled between the emperor and France, as rendered it impossible for the ecclesiastics from many parts of Europe to resort thither in safety. The legates, accordingly, remained several months at Trent; but as no person appeared there, except a few prelates from the ecclesiastical states of the pope, in order to avoid the ridicule and contempt which this drew upon him from the enemies of the church, recalled them, and prorogued the council<sup>u</sup>.

Unhappily for the authority of the papacy at the very time that the German protestants took every occasion of pouring contempt upon it, the emperor and king of the Romans were necessary not only to connive at their conduct, but to court their favour by repeated absolutions and indulgence. In the same diet of Spire, where they had protested in the most distant terms against assembling a council at Trent, Ferdinand, who depended on their aid for

<sup>u</sup> F. Paul, p. 97. Sleid. 296.

fence of Hungary, not only permitted that protestation to be inserted in the records of the diet, but renewed in their favour all the emperor's concessions at Ratisbon, adding to them whatever they demanded for their farther security. Among other particulars, he granted a suspension of a decree of the Imperial chamber against the city of Goslar (one of those which had entered into the league of Smalkalde), on account of its having seized the ecclesiastical revenues within its domains, and enjoined Henry duke of Brunswick to desist from his attempts to carry that decree into execution. But Henry, a furious bigot, and no less obstinate than rash in all his undertakings, continuing to disquiet the people of Goslar by his incursions, the elector of Saxony and landgrave of Hesse, that they might not suffer any member of the Smalkaldic body to be oppressed, assembled their forces, declared war in form against Henry, and in the space of a few weeks, stripping him entirely of his dominions, drove him as a wretched exile to take refuge in the court of Bavaria. By this act of vengeance, no less severe than sudden, they filled all Germany with dread of their power, and the confederates of Smalkalde appeared, by this first effort of their arms, to be as ready as they were able to protect those who had joined their association \*.

Emboldened by so many concessions in their favour, as well as by the progress which their opinions daily made, the princes of the league of

\* *Skid. 296. Commemoratio succincta Caesarum Belli. c. 2 Smalkaldicis contra Henr. Brunsw. ab iisdem edita Scardium, tom. ii. 307.*

thus, they ventured a step farther; and against the recess of a diet held at Buda [April 23, 1543], which provided for the Protestants of Hungary, refused to furnish their arms for that purpose, unless the Imperial army were reformed, and full security were granted them in every point with regard to religion.

1544.] Such were the lengths to which the protestants had proceeded, and such the confidence in their own power, when they returned from the Low-Countries, that they called the diet which he had summoned to meet them at Buda. The respect due to the emperor, as well as the importance of the affairs which were laid before it, rendered this assembly very full. All the electors, a great number of ecclesiastical and secular, with the nobles of most of the cities, were present. C

privileges. He began accordingly, with courting the elector of Saxony, and landgrave of Hesse, the heads of the protestant party, and by giving up some things in their favour, and granting liberal promises with regard to others, he secured himself from any danger of opposition on their part. Having gained this capital point, he then ventured to address the diet with greater freedom. He began by representing his own zeal, and unwearied efforts with regard to two things most essential to Christendom, the procuring of a general council in order to compose the religious dissensions which had unhappily arisen in Germany, and the providing some proper means for checking the formidable progress of the Turkish arms. But he observed, with deep regret, that his pious endeavours had been entirely defeated by the unjustifiable ambition of the French king, who having wantonly kindled the flame of war in Europe, which had been so lately extinguished by the truce of Nice, rendered it impossible for the fathers of the church to assemble in council, or to deliberate with security; and obliged him to employ those forces in his own defence, which, with greater satisfaction to himself, as well as more honour to Christendom, he would have turned against the infidels: that Francis, not thinking it enough to have called him off from opposing the Mahometans, had, with unexampled impiety, invited them into the heart of Christendom, and joining his arms to theirs, had openly attacked the duke of Savoy a member of the empire: that Barbarossa's fleet was now in one of the ports of France, waiting only the return of spring to carry terror and  
sold

solation to the coast of some Christian state; that in such a situation it was folly to think of distant expeditions against the Turk, or of marching to oppose his armies in Hungary, while such a powerful ally received him into the centre of Europe, and gave him footing there. It was a dictate of prudence, he added, to oppose the nearest and most imminent danger, first of all, and by humbling the power of France, to deprive Solyman of the advantages, which he derived from the unnatural confederacy formed between him and a monarch, who still arrogated the name of Most Christian: that, in truth, a war against the French king and the sultan ought to be considered as the same thing; and that every advantage gained over the former was a severe and sensible blow to the latter: on all these accounts, he concluded with demanding their aid against Francis, not merely as an enemy of the Germanic body, or of him who was its head, but as an avowed ally of the infidels, and a public enemy to the Christian name.

In order to give greater weight to this violent invective of the emperor, the king of the Romans stood up, and related the rapid conquests of the sultan in Hungary, occasioned, as he said, by the fatal necessity imposed on his brother, of employing his arms against France. When he had finished, the ambassador of Savoy gave a detail of Barbarossa's operations at Nice, and of the ravages which he had committed on that coast. All these, added to the general indignation which Francis's unprecedented union with the Turks excited in Europe, made such an impression on the diet as the emperor wished, and disposed

disposed most of the members to grant him such effectual aid as he had demanded. The ambassadors whom Francis had sent to explain the motives of his conduct, were not permitted to enter the bounds of the empire ; and the apology which they published for their master, vindicating his alliance with Solyman, by examples drawn from Scripture, and the practice of Christian princes, was little regarded by men who were irritated already, or prejudiced against him to such a degree, as to be incapable of allowing their proper weight to any arguments in his behalf.

Such being the favourable disposition of the Germans, Charles perceived that nothing could now obstruct his gaining all that he aimed at, but the fears and jealousies of the protestants, which he determined to quiet by granting every thing that the utmost solicitude of these passions could desire for the security of their religion. With this view, he consented to a recess, whereby all the rigorous edicts hitherto issued against the protestants were suspended ; a council either general or national to be assembled in Germany was declared necessary, in order to re-establish peace in the church ; until one of these should be held (which the emperor undertook to bring about as soon as possible), the free and public exercise of the protestant religion was authorized ; the Imperial chamber was enjoined to give no molestation to the protestants ; and when the term, for which the present judges in that court were elected, should expire, persons duly qualified were then to be admitted as members, without any distinction on account of religion. In r



turn for these extraordinary acts of indulgence, the protestants concurred with the other members of the diet, in declaring war against Francis in name of the empire; in voting the emperor a body of twenty-four thousand foot and four thousand horse, to be maintained at the public expence for six months, to be employed against France; and at the same time the diet imposed a poll-tax to be levied throughout all Germany on every person without exception, for the support of the war against the Turks.

Charles, while he gave the greatest attention to the minute and intricate detail of particulars necessary towards conducting the deliberations of a numerous and divided assembly to such a successful period, negotiated a separate peace with the king of Denmark; who, though he had hitherto performed nothing considerable in consequence of his alliance with Francis, had it in his power, however, to make a troublesome diversion in favour of that monarch<sup>2</sup>. At the same time, he did not neglect proper applications to the king of England, in order to rouse him to more vigorous efforts against their common enemy. Little, indeed, was wanting to accomplish this; for such events had happened in Scotland as inflamed Henry to the most violent pitch of resentment against Francis. Having concluded with the parliament of Scotland a treaty of marriage between his son and their young queen, by which he reckoned himself secure of effecting the union of the two kingdoms, which had been long desired, and often attempted without suc-

<sup>2</sup> Dumont Corps Diplom. t. iv. p. 274.

cess by his predecessors, Mary of Guise the queen-mother, cardinal Beaton, and other partizans of France, found means not only to break off the match, but to alienate the Scottish nation entirely from the friendship of England, and to strengthen its ancient attachment to France. Henry, however, did not abandon an object of so much importance; and as the humbling of Francis, besides the pleasure of taking revenge upon an enemy who had disappointed a favourite measure, appeared the most effectual method of bringing the Scots to accept once more of the treaty which they had relinquished, he was so eager to accomplish this, that he was ready to second whatever the emperor could propose to be attempted against the French king. The plan, accordingly, which they concerted, was such, if it had been punctually executed, as must have ruined France in the first place, and would have augmented so prodigiously the emperor's power and territories, as might in the end have proved fatal to the liberties of Europe. They agreed to invade France each with an army of twenty-five thousand men, and, without losing time in besieging the frontier towns, to advance directly towards the interior provinces, and to join their forces near Paris<sup>a</sup>.

Francis stood alone in opposition to all the enemies whom Charles was mustering against him. Solymán had been the only ally who did not desert him; but the assistance which he received from him had rendered him so odious to all Christendom, that he resolved rather to forego *all the advantages of his friendship, than to be*

<sup>a</sup> Herbert, 245. Bellay, 448.

on that account, the object of general de-  
 on. For this reason, he dismissed Barba-  
 as soon as winter was over, who, after re-  
 the coast of Naples and Tuscany, return-  
 Constantinople. As Francis could not  
 to equal the forces of so many powers com-  
 against him, he endeavoured to supply the  
 it by dispatch, which was more in his  
 er, and to get the start of them in taking  
 e field. Early in the spring the count d'En-  
 uien invested Carignan, a town in Piedmont  
 which the marquis del Guasto the Imperial gene-  
 al having surprised the former year, considered  
 as of so much importance, that he had fortified  
 it at great expence. The count pushed the  
 siege with such vigour, that Guasto, fond of his  
 own conquest, and seeing no other way of saving  
 it from falling into the hands of the French, re-  
 solved to hazard a battle in order to relieve it.  
 He began his march from Milan for this pur-  
 pose, and as he was at no pains to conceal  
 intention, it was soon known in the French  
 camp. Enguien, a gallant and enterpri-  
 young man, wished passionately to try the  
 tune of a battle; his troops desired it with  
 less ardour; but the peremptory injunction  
 the king not to venture a general engage-  
 flowing from a prudent attention to the  
 situation of affairs, as well as from the  
 brance of former disasters, restrained him  
 venturing upon it. Unwilling, howe-  
 abandon Carignan, when it was just to  
 yield, and eager to distinguish his com-  
 some memorable action, he dispatched  
 court, in order to lay before the king

res of fighting the enemy, and the hopes he had of victory. The king referred the matter to his privy council; all the ministers declared, one after another, against fighting, and stated their sentiments by reasons extremely plausible. While they were delivering their opinions, Monluc, who was permitted to be present, discovered such visible and extravagant symptoms of impatience to speak, as well as dissatisfaction with what he heard, that he was, diverted with his appearance, called on him to declare what he could offer in reply to the arguments which seemed to be as just as they were general. Upon this, Monluc, a plain but brave soldier, and of known courage, represented the good condition of the troops, their readiness to meet the enemy in the field, their confidence in their officers, together with the declining infamy which the declining of a battle would bring on the French arms; and he supported his arguments with such lively impetuosity, and such a flow of military eloquence, as gained him to his opinion, not only the king, naturally fond of daring actions, but several of the council. He, catching the same enthusiasm which had animated his troops, suddenly started up, and lifted his hands to Heaven, and implored divine protection, he then addressed himself to Monluc, "Go," says he, "return to the front, and fight in the name of God<sup>b</sup>." Sooner was it known that the king had given Enguien leave to fight the Imperialists, such was the martial ardour of the gallant

<sup>b</sup> *Memoires de Monluc.*



officers, English immediately prepared, nor did Guasto decline the combat. Number of cavalry was almost equal, but Spanish infantry exceeded the French by ten thousand men. They met near [April 11], in an open plain, which afforded neither any advantage of ground, and full time to form their army in proportion. The shock was such as might have been expected between veteran troops, violent and brave. The French cavalry rushing forward to charge with their usual vivacity, but every thing that opposed them; but on the other hand, the steady and disciplined Spanish infantry having forced them, which they encountered to give way, remained in suspense, ready to declare if ever general could make the best use of

victorious wherever they fought, to fall upon the Spaniards. This motion proved decisive. All that followed was confusion and slaughter. The marquis del Guasto, wounded in the thigh, escaped only by the swiftness of his horse. The victory of the French was complete, ten thousand of the Imperialists being slain, and a considerable number, with all their tents, baggage, and artillery, taken. On the part of the conquerors, their joy was without alloy, a few only being killed, and among these no officer of distinction.

This splendid action, beside the reputation with which it was attended, delivered France from an imminent danger, as it ruined the army with which Guasto had intended to invade the country between the Rhone and Saone, where there were neither fortified towns nor regular forces to oppose his progress. But it was not in Francis's power to pursue the victory with such vigour as to reap all the advantages which it might have yielded; for though the Milanese remained now almost defenceless; though the inhabitants, who had long murmured under the rigour of the Imperial government, were ready to throw off the yoke; though Enguien, flushed with success, urged the king to seize this happy opportunity of recovering a country, the acquisition of which had been long his favourite object; yet, as the emperor and king of England were preparing to break in upon the opposite frontier of France with numerous armies, it be-

<sup>c</sup> Bellay, 429, &c. *Memoires de Montuc. Jovii Hist*  
p. xlv. p. 327. 6.

came necessary to sacrifice all though  
quest to the public safety; and to r  
thousand of Enguien's best troops  
ployed in defence of the kingdom.  
subsequent operations were, of consi  
languid and inconsiderable, that th  
of Carignan and some other towns in  
was all that he gained by his great  
Cerisoles<sup>d</sup>.

The emperor, as usual, was late  
the field, but he appeared, towards  
ning of June, at the head of an arm  
merous and better appointed than an  
had hitherto led against France. I  
almost to fifty thousand men, and pa  
ing reduced Luxembourg and some  
in the Netherlands, before he himse  
he now marched with the whole t  
frontiers of Champagne [June]. C  
ording to his agreement with th  
England, ought to have advanced  
wards Paris; and the Dauphin, who  
the only army to which Francis trust  
security of his dominions in that q  
in no condition to oppose him. But  
with which the French had defende  
in the year one thousand five hundred  
lix, had taught them the most effect  
of distressing an invading enemy. C  
a country abounding more in vines  
was incapable of maintaining a great  
before the emperor's approach, wha  
be of any use to his troops had been

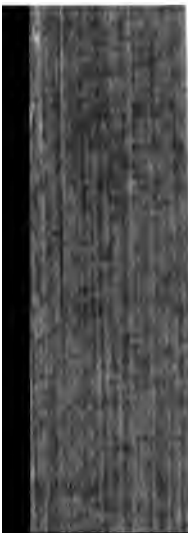
or destroyed. This rendered it necessary for him to be master of some places of strength in order to secure the convoys, on which alone he now perceived that he must depend for subsistence; and he found the frontier towns so ill provided for defence, that he hoped it would not be a work either of much time or difficulty to reduce them. Accordingly Ligny and Commerce, which he first attacked, surrendered after a short resistance. He then invested St. Disier [July 8], which, though it commanded an important pass on the Marne, was destitute of every thing necessary for sustaining a siege. But the count de Sancerre and M. de la Lande, who had acquired such reputation by the defence of Landrecy, generously threw themselves into the town, and undertook to hold it out to the last extremity. The emperor soon found how capable they were of making good their promise, and that he could not expect to take the town without besieging it in form. This accordingly he undertook; and as it was his nature never to abandon any enterprise in which he had once engaged, he persisted in it with an inconsiderate obstinacy.

The king of England's preparations for the campaign were complete long before the emperor's; but as he did not choose, on the one hand, to encounter alone the whole power of France, and was unwilling, on the other, that his troops should remain inactive, he took that opportunity of chastising the Scots, by sending his fleet, together with a considerable part of his infantry, under the earl of Hertford, to invade their country. Hertford executed his commission with vigour, plundered and burnt Edinburgh.



the siege of St. Disier ; an ambassador, whom he sent to congratulate the monarch on his safe arrival on the solicited him to march, in terms of t directly to Paris. But Charles had f such an ill example of fulfilling the con their confederacy with exactness, tha observing him employ his time and taking towns for his own behoof, saw why he should not attempt the reductio places that lay conveniently for himself out paying any regard to the emperor frances, he immediately invested Bouk commanded the duke of Norfolk to siege of Montreuil, which had been l fore his arrival, by a body of Fleming junction with some English troops. Charles and Henry shewed such atten to his own interest, they both neglected mon cause. Instead of the union and c

Dauphin, who still acted as general, prudently declining a battle, the loss of which would have endangered the kingdom, satisfied himself with harassing the emperor with his light troops, cutting off his convoys, and laying waste the country around him. Though extremely distressed by these operations, Charles still pressed the siege of St. Dizier, which Sancerre defended with astonishing fortitude and conduct. He repulsed repeated assaults, repulsing the enemy in all; and undismayed even by the death of his brave associate De la Lande, who was killed by a cannon-ball, he continued to shew the same countenance and obstinate resolution. At the end of the five weeks, he was still in a position to hold out some time longer, when an office of Granvelle's induced him to surrender. That crafty politician, having intercepted the letter to the cypher which the duke of Guise used in communicating intelligence to Sancerre, forged a letter in his name, authorizing Sancerre to capitulate, as the king, though highly satisfied with his behaviour, thought it imprudent to hazard a battle for his relief. This letter he conveyed into the town in a manner which could excite no suspicion, and the governor fell into the snare. Even then, he obtained such honourable conditions as his gallant defence merited, and among others, a cessation of hostilities for eight days, at the expiration of which he bound himself to open the gates, if Francis, during that time, did not attack the Imperial army, and draw fresh troops into the town<sup>d</sup>. Thus San-



cerre, by detaining the emperor in an inconsiderable place, afforded time to assemble all his forces, falls to the lot of an officer in command, acquired the glory of his country.

As soon as St. Didier's terror advanced into the heart [August 17], but Sancerre's had damped his sanguine hopes of Paris, and led him seriously to consider what he might expect before towns so well and defended by more numerous troops. At the same time, the procuring of provisions for his army was attended with great difficulty, increased in proportion as he advanced from his own frontier. He had sent out a number of his best troops in the field, and many fell daily in skirmishes. It was not in his power to avoid, though he wished, that his army insensibly without le-

small village near Chalons. At the same time, Charles, either from a desire of making one great final effort against France, or merely to gain a pretext for deserting his ally, and concluding a separate peace, sent an ambassador formally to require Henry, according to the stipulation in their treaty, to advance towards Paris. While he expected a return from him, and waited the issue of the conferences at Chaufse, he continued to march forward, though in the utmost distress from scarcity of provisions. But at last, by a fortunate motion on his part, or through some neglect or treachery on that of the French, he surprised first Esperney and then Chateau Thierry, in both which were considerable magazines. No sooner was it known that these towns, the latter of which is not two days march from Paris, were in the hands of the enemy, than that great capital, defenceless, and susceptible of any violent alarm in proportion to its greatness, was filled with consternation. The inhabitants, as if the emperor had been already at their gates, fled in the wildest confusion and despair, many sending their wives and children down the Seine to Rouen, others to Orleans, and the towns upon the Loire. Francis himself, more afflicted with this than with any other event during his reign, and sensible as well of the triumph that his rival would enjoy in insulting his capital, as of the danger to which the kingdom was exposed, could not refrain from crying out in the first emotion of his surprise and sorrow, "How dear, O my God, do I pay for this crown, which I thought thou hadst granted me freely!" But recovering in a moment


threw a strong garrison into Meaux, and forced march got into Fertè, between perialists and the capital.

Upon this, the emperor, who began feel the want of provisions, perceiving Dauphin still prudently declined a battle not daring to attack his camp with much shattered and reduced by hard turned suddenly to the right, and began back towards Soissons. Having about received Henry's answer, whereby he abandoned the sieges of Boulogne and Montreuil of both which he expected every moment possession, he thought himself absolved of obligations of adhering to the treaty and at full liberty to consult his own interest in what manner soever he pleased. He could therefore, to renew the conference, w

daughter, or the second daughter of his brother Ferdinand ; that if he chose to bestow on him his own daughter, he shall settle on her all the provinces of the Low-Countries, to be erected into an independent state, which shall descend to the male issue of the marriage ; that if he determined to give him his niece, he shall, with her, grant him the investiture of Milan and its dependencies ; that he shall within four months declare which of these two princesses he had pitched upon, and fulfil the respective conditions upon the consummation of the marriage, which shall take place within a year from the date of the treaty ; that as soon as the duke of Orleans is put in possession either of the Low-Countries or of Milan, Francis shall restore to the duke of Savoy all that he now possesses of his territories, except Pignerol and Montmillian ; that Francis shall renounce all pretensions to the kingdom of Naples, or to the sovereignty of Flanders and Artois, and Charles shall give up his claim to the dutchy of Burgundy and county of Charolois ; that Francis shall give no aid to the exiled king of Navarre ; that both monarchs shall join in making war upon the Turk, towards which the king shall furnish, when required by the emperor and empire, six hundred men at arms, and ten thousand foot <sup>a</sup>

Besides the immediate motives to this peace, arising from the distress of his army through want of provisions ; from the difficulty of retreating out of France, and the impossibility of

<sup>a</sup> *Recueil des Traitez. t. i. 227. Belius de Causis Paci  
Crepisc. in Actis Erudit. Lips. 1763.*



determining the doctrines in controversy considering both these steps as sacrilegious encroachments on the jurisdiction as well as leges of the holy see, had addressed the emperor a remonstrance rather than a letter on this subject, written with such acrimony of style and in a style of such high authority, imbued more of an intention to draw on than of a desire to reclaim him. This was not a little inflamed by the emperor's alliance with Henry of England, which being contracted with an heretic, excommunicated by the holy see, appeared to the pope a profane alliance which was not less dreaded by him than that contracted with Solyman. Paul's son and grandson were incensed at the emperor for having gratified them with regard to the allies of Parma and Placentia, contributed by

The union of the pope with France, as well knew, would instantly expose his dominions in Italy to be attacked. The Venetians he foresaw, would probably follow the example of a pontiff, who was considered as a pillar of political wisdom among the Italians; thus, at a juncture when he felt himself unequal to the burden of the present war, could be overwhelmed with the weight of a confederacy against him<sup>l</sup>. At the same time the Turks, almost unresisted, made such progress in Hungary, reducing town after town, they approached near to the confines of the Austrian provinces<sup>k</sup>. Above all these, the extraordinary progress of the protestant doctrines in many, and the dangerous combination into which the princes of that profession had entered, drew for his immediate attention. Almost one half of Germany had revolted from the established church; the fidelity of the rest was much shaken; the nobility of Austria had demanded of Ferdinand the free exercise of religion<sup>l</sup>; the Bohemians, among whom some seeds of the doctrines Luther still remained, openly favoured the new opinions; the archbishop of Cologne, with a piety which is seldom found among ecclesiastics, had begun the reformation of his diocese; nor was it possible, unless some timely and effectual checks were given to the spirit of innovation, to foresee where it would end. He himself had been a witness, in the late diet, to the peremptory and decisive tone which the protestants had

*F. Paul.* 100. *Pallavic.* 163.

<sup>l</sup> 177.

<sup>k</sup> *Steid.* 285.

<sup>k</sup> *Istuanbaffi* Hist.




authority, and would not choose to own a mere nominal head of the empire, some and speedy effort was requisite on his part could not be made during a war that the greatest exertion of his strength against a reign and powerful enemy.

Such being the emperor's inducement to peace, he had the address to frame that of Crespy so as to promote all the ends he had in view. By coming to an agreement with Francis, he took from the pope the prospect of advantage in courting the friendship of that monarch in preference to his. By the same treaty with regard to a war with the Turks, he not only deprived Solymán of a powerful ally, but turned the arms of that ally against himself. By a private article, not inserted in the treaty, it might not raise any unreasonable

should hereafter tempt Francis to forget this engagement, he left him embarrassed with a war against England, which would put it out of his power to take any considerable part in the affairs of Germany.

Henry, possessed at all times with an high idea of his own power and importance, felt, in the most sensible manner, the neglect with which the emperor had treated him in concluding a separate peace. But the situation of his affairs was such as somewhat alleviated the mortification which this occasioned. For though he was obliged to recall the duke of Norfolk from the siege of Montreuil [Sept. 14], because the Flemish troops received orders to retire, Boulogne had surrendered before the negotiations at Crespy were brought to an issue. While elated with vanity on account of this conquest, and inflamed with indignation against the emperor, the ambassadors whom Francis sent to make overtures of peace, found him too arrogant to grant what was moderate or equitable. His demands were indeed extravagant, and made in the tone of a conqueror; that Francis should renounce his alliance with Scotland, and not only pay up the arrears of former debts, but reimburse the money which Henry had expended in the present war. Francis, though sincerely desirous of peace, and willing to yield a great deal in order to obtain it, being now free from the pressure of the Imperial arms, rejected these ignominious propositions with disdain; and Henry departing for England, hostilities continued between the two nations <sup>n</sup>.

<sup>n</sup> *Mem. de Ribier*, t. i. p. 572. *Herbert*, 247.



now duke of Orleans, and complained t  
his eagerness to gain an establishme  
favourite son, he had sacrificed the hon  
kingdom, and renounced the most ancie  
as valuable rights of the crown. But a  
not venture to offend the king by re  
ratify it, though extremely desirous at  
time of securing to himself the privile  
claiming what was now alienated so m  
detriment, he secretly protested, in p  
some of his adherents, against the wh  
action; and declared whatever he  
obliged to do in order to confirm it,  
self, and void of all obligation. The p  
of Thoulouse, probably by the instigat  
partisans, did the same°. But Francis  
pleased as well with having delivered h  
from the miseries of an invasion, as

ing Ferdinand's daughter in marriage to the Duke of Orleans, together with the dutchy of Burgundy as her dowry <sup>P</sup>. Every circumstance seemed to promise the continuance of peace. The emperor, cruelly afflicted with the gout, seemed to be in no condition to undertake any enterprise where great activity was requisite, or great fatigue to be endured. He himself felt or wished at least that it should be believed; being so much disabled by this excruciating pain, when a French ambassador followed him to Brussels, in order to be present at the conclusion of the treaty of peace, that it was with the utmost difficulty that he signed his name. He observed, that there was no great danger of his violating these articles, as a hand could hardly hold a pen, was little able to resist a lance.

The violence of his disease confined the emperor several months in Brussels, and was the apparent cause of putting off the execution of the scheme which he had formed in order to divide the protestant party in Germany. But there were other reasons for this delay. For, ever prevalent the motives were which deterred him to undertake this enterprise, the weakness of that great body which he was about to attack, as well as the situation of his own affairs, made it necessary to deliberate long, to proceed with caution, and not too suddenly to raise aside the veil under which he had hitherto concealed his real sentiments and schemes. He was sensible that the protestants, conscious of

their own strength, but apprehensions of his designs, had a powerful confederacy joined a feeble faction; and were not able to discern the first appearance ready to take arms in order to resist him. At this time, he still continued in a state of war; and though, in order to diminish this incumbrance, he had detached an envoy to the Porte with most humble and even submissive overtures of peace, the artifices of that haughty court were so subtle, that before these were known, it was highly imprudent to have kindled a civil war in his own dominions.

Upon this account, he appeared with a bull issued by the pope in the name of the peace of Crespy [Nov. 19], for a council to assemble at Trent early in the year, and exhorting all Christian princes to seize the opportunity that the present state of tranquillity afforded them, of suppress heresies which threatened to subvert the religion which was sacred or venerable among Christians. After such a slight expression of dissent, he determined to countenance the council, and to become no inconsiderable instrument in accomplishing his projects, and only appointed ambassadors to appear in his name, but ordered the ecclesiastical princes to attend at the time prefixed.

1545.] Such were the emperor's views on the Imperial diet, after several pro-

opened at Worms [March 24]. The protestants, who enjoyed the free exercise of their religion by a very precarious tenure, having no other security for it than the recess of the last diet, which was to continue in force only until the meeting of a council, wished earnestly to establish that important privilege upon some firmer basis, and to hold it by a perpetual not a temporary title. But instead of offering them any additional security, Ferdinand opened the diet with observing, that there were two points, which chiefly required consideration, the prosecution of the war against the Turks, and the state of religion; that the former was the most urgent, as Solyman, after conquering the greatest part of Hungary, was now ready to fall upon the Austrian provinces; that the emperor, who, from the beginning of his reign, had neglected no opportunity of annoying this formidable enemy, and with the hazard of his own person had resisted its attacks, being animated still with the same zeal; had now consented to stop short in the career of his success against France, that, in connection with his ancient rival, he might turn his arms with greater vigour against the common adversary of the Christian faith; that it became the members of the empire to second those glorious endeavours of its head; that, therefore, they ought, without delay, to vote him such effectual aid as not only their duty but their interest called upon them to furnish; that the controversies about religion were so intricate, and of such difficult discussion, as to give no hope of its being possible to bring them at present to any final issue: by perseverance and repeated solicitation

The popish members of the diet received the declaration with great applause, and their entire acquiescence in every part it contained. The protestants expressed surprise at propositions, which were so repugnant to the recesses of the former, insisted that the questions with regard to it, as first in dignity and importance, ought to be first under deliberation; that, alarmed at the progress of the Turks, and to all Germany securing the free exercise of their religion, they were still more nearly, nor could they prosecute a foreign war with spirit, while they were so uncertain about their domestic tranquility; that if the latter were once rendered permanent, they would concur with the Catholics in pushing the former, and yield to them in activity or zeal. But if the danger from the Turkish arms was indeed so imminent, they ought to admit of such a delay as would be

religion, until the meeting of a legal council; but as the pope had now called a council, to which Ferdinand had required them to submit, they began to suspect that their adversaries might take advantage of an ambiguity in the terms of recess, and pretending that the event therein mentioned had now taken place, might pronounce them to be no longer entitled to the same indulgence. In order to guard against this interpretation, they renewed their former remonstrances against a council called to meet without the aids of the empire, summoned by the pope's authority, and in which he assumed the right of judging; and declared that, notwithstanding convocation of any such illegal assembly, they still held the recess of the late diet to be in force.

At other junctures, when the emperor thought it advantageous to soothe and gain the protestants, he had devised expedients for giving them satisfaction with regard to demands seemingly more extravagant; but his views at present being very different, Ferdinand, by his command, adhered exactly to his first propositions, and would make no concessions which had the most remote tendency to throw discredit on the council, or to weaken its authority. The protestants, on their part, were no less inflexible; and after much time spent in fruitless endeavours to convince each other, they came to no agreement. Nor did the presence of the emperor, who upon his return arrived at Worms [May 15], contribute any degree to render the protestants more compliant. Fully convinced that they were maintaining the cause of God and of truth, they



held under the influence of a pope, already precluded himself from all title as a judge, by his having stigmatized nations with the name of heresy, and against them the heaviest censures, and by the plenitude of his usurped power, inflicted.


While the protestants, with such unanimity and firmness, rejected all intercourse with the pope, and refused their assent to the council, and refused their assent to the demands in respect to the Turkish war, of Saxony alone shewed an inclination to comply with the emperor with regard to both. The emperor, who professed an inviolable regard to the religion, he assumed an appearance of respectability peculiar to himself, by which he conveyed favourable sentiments which the emperor entertained of him, and gradually gave

er to procure present aid from the protest-  
 against the Turks, or to quiet their fears and  
 oulies on account of their religion. But as his  
 emes were not yet ripe for execution, nor his  
 parations so far advanced that he could force  
 compliance of the protestants, or punish their  
 inacy, he artfully concealed his own inten-  
 s. That he might augment their security,  
 [August 4] appointed a diet to be held at  
 isbon early next year, in order to adjust what  
 now left undetermined; and previous to it,  
 agreed that a certain number of divines of  
 a party should meet, in order to confer upon  
 points in dispute<sup>t</sup>.

ut, how far soever this appearance of a de-  
 to maintain the present tranquillity might  
 imposed upon the protestants, the emperor  
 incapable of such uniform and thorough dis-  
 lation, as to hide altogether from their view  
 dangerous designs which he was meditating  
 nst them. Herman count de Weid, arch-  
 op and elector of Cologne, a prelate con-  
 ious for his virtue and primitive simplicity of  
 ners, though not more distinguished for learn-  
 than the other descendants of noble families,  
 in that age possessed most of the great bene-  
 in Germany, having become a profelyte to  
 loctrines of the reformers, had begun in the  
 one thousand five hundred and forty-three,  
 the assistance of Melancthon and Bucer, to  
 sh the ancient superstition in his diocese, and  
 introduce in its place the rites established  
 ng the protestants. But the canons of his

<sup>t</sup> Sleid. 351.

cathedral, who were not possessed with the same spirit of innovation, and who foresaw how fatal the levelling genius of the new sect would prove to their dignity and wealth, opposed, from the beginning, this unprecedented enterprise of their archbishop, with all the zeal flowing from reverence for old institutions, heightened by concern for their own interest. This opposition, which the archbishop considered only as a new argument to demonstrate the necessity of a reformation, neither shook his resolution, nor slackened his ardour in prosecuting his plan. The canons, perceiving all their endeavours to check his career to be ineffectual, solemnly protested against his proceedings, and appealed for redress to the pope and emperor, the former as ecclesiastical, the latter as his civil superior. This appeal being laid before the emperor, during his residence in Worms, he took the canons of Cologne under



y. He allowed an Italian monk to inveigle the Lutherans from the pulpit of Rome, and to call upon him, as he regarded our God, to exterminate that pestilent

He dispatched the embassy, which has already mentioned, to Constantinople, with offers of peace, that he might be free from apprehensions of danger or interruption from that quarter. Nor did any of these steps, or dangerous tendency, escape the jealousy of the protestants, or fail to alarm ears, and to excite their solicitude for the welfare of their sect.

In the meanwhile, Charles's good fortune, which was maintained on all occasions over that of his father Francis, extricated him out of a difficulty, which, with all his sagacity and address, he could not have found it no easy matter to have surmounted himself. Just about the time when the Duke of Orleans should have received Ferdi-

na's daughter in marriage, and together with the possession of the Milanese, he died of a violent fever [Sept. 8]. By this event, the emperor was freed from the necessity of giving up the valuable province into the hands of France, or from the indecency of violating a recent solemn engagement, which must have occasioned an immediate rupture with France. He did, however, to express great sorrow for the untimely death of a young prince, who was ever been so nearly allied to him; but he wisely avoided entering into any fresh discussion concerning the Milanese; and would not assent to a proposal which came from Francis, for modelling the treaty of Crespy, so as




flat refusal to comply with a demand so equitable ; but the declining health, the exhausted condition together with the burden of England, obliged him, at present, to suppress his resentment, and to put off his revenge to some other juncture. After this event, the unfortunate king lost all hope of obtaining the lost territories ; and the rights or claims by the treaty of Crespy returned to the crown of France, to serve as a prelude to future wars \*.

Upon the first intelligence of Charles of Orleans's death, the confederates flattered themselves that the effort which appeared to be unavoidable, and of which it could hardly fail of producing, would prove the means of their success. But they were not more disapp

found that he could not bring Charles to approve of his ambitious schemes, he ventured to grant his son Peter Lewis the investiture of Parma and Placentia, though at the risk of incurring the displeasure of the emperor. At a time when a great part of Europe inveighed openly against the corrupt manners and exorbitant power of ecclesiastics, and when a council was summoned to reform the disorders of the church, this indecent grant of such a principality, to a son of whose illegitimate birth the pope ought to have been ashamed, and whose licentious morals all good men detested, gave general offence. Some cardinals in the Imperial interest remonstrated against such an unbecoming alienation of the patrimony of the church; the Spanish ambassador would not be present at the solemnity of his investiture; and upon pretext that these cities were part of the Milanese state, the emperor peremptorily refused to confirm the deed of investiture. But both the emperor and pope being intent upon one common object in Germany, they sacrificed their particular passions to that public cause, and suppressed the emotions of jealousy or resentment which were rising on this occasion, that they might jointly pursue what each deemed to be of greater importance.

About this time the peace of Germany was disturbed by a violent but short eruption of Henry duke of Brunswick. This prince, though still stript of his dominions, which the emperor held in sequestration, until his differences with the confederates of Smalkalde should be adjusted,

possessed however so much credit in Germany, that he undertook to raise for the French king a considerable body of troops to be employed in the war against England. The money stipulated for this purpose was duly advanced by Francis; the troops were levied; but Henry, instead of leading them towards France, suddenly entered his own dominions at their head, in hopes of recovering possession of them before any army could be assembled to oppose him. The confederates were not more surpris'd at this unexpected attack, than the king of France was astonish'd at a mean thievish fraud, so unbecoming the character of a prince. But the landgrave of Hesse, with incredible expedition, collected as many men as put a stop to the progress of Henry's undisciplined forces, and being joined by his son-in-law, Maurice, and by some troops belonging to the elector of Saxony, he gained such ad-



doctrines of the reformers, which, upon his accession to the principality, he openly manifested. But as he expected that something effectual towards a general and legal establishment of religion, would be the fruit of so many diets, conferences, and negotiations, he did not, at first, attempt any public innovation in his dominions. Finding all these issue in nothing, he thought himself called, at length [Jan. 10, 1546], to countenance by his authority the system which he approved of, and to gratify the wishes of his subjects, who, by their intercourse with the protestant states, had almost universally imbibed their opinions. As the warmth and impetuosity, which accompanied the spirit of reformation in its first efforts, had somewhat abated, this change was made with great order and regularity; the ancient rites were abolished, and new forms introduced, without any acts of violence, or symptom of discontent. Though Frederick adopted the religious system of the protestants, he imitated the example of Maurice, and did not accede to the league of Smalkalde<sup>a</sup>.

A few weeks before this revolution in the palatinate, the general council was opened with the accustomed solemnities at Trent. The eyes of the catholic states were turned with much expectation towards an assembly, which all had considered as capable of applying an effectual remedy for the disorders of the church, when they first broke out, though many were afraid that it was now too late to hope for great benefit from it, *when the malady, by being suffered to increase*

<sup>a</sup> Steid. 356. Seck. l. iii. 616.



during twenty-eight years, had become inveterate, and grown to such extreme violence. The pope, by his last bull of convocation, had appointed the first meeting to be held in March. But his views, and those of the emperor, were so different, that almost the whole year was spent in negotiations. Charles, who foresaw that the rigorous decrees of the council against the protestants would soon drive them, in self-defence as well as from resentment, to some desperate extreme, laboured to put off its meeting until his warlike preparations were so far advanced, that he might be in a condition to second its decisions by the force of his arms. The pope, who had early sent to Trent the legates who were to preside in his name, knowing to what contempt it would expose his authority, and what suspicions it would beget of his intentions, if the fathers of the council should remain in a state of inactivity, when the church was in such danger as to require their immediate and vigorous interposition, insisted either upon translating the council to some city in Italy, or upon suspending altogether its proceedings at that juncture, or upon authorizing it to begin its deliberations immediately. The emperor rejected the two former expedients as equally offensive to the Germans of every denomination; but finding it impossible to elude the latter, he proposed that the council should begin with reforming the disorders in the church, before it proceeded to examine or define articles of faith. This was the very thing which the court of Rome dreaded most, and which had prompted it to employ so many artifices in order to prevent the meeting of

to

1 a dangerous judicatory. Paul, though  
 e compliant than some of his predecessors  
 1 regard to calling a council, was no less  
 ous than they had been of its jurisdiction, and  
 what matter of triumph such a method of  
 eeding would afford the heretics. He appre-  
 led consequences not only humbling but fatal  
 he papal see, if the council came to consider  
 nquest into abuses as their only business; or  
 ferior prelates were allowed to gratify their  
 envy and peevishness, by prescribing rules  
 hose who were exalted above them in dignity  
 power. Without listening, therefore, to this  
 lious proposal of the emperor, he instructed  
 egates to open the council.

an. 18] The first session was spent in matters  
 form. In a subsequent one, it was agreed  
 the framing a confession of faith, wherein  
 ld be contained all the articles which the  
 rch required its members to believe, ought  
 e the first and principal business of the coun-  
 but that, at the same time, due attention  
 ld be given to what was necessary towards  
 reformation of manners and discipline. From  
 first symptom of the spirit with which the  
 ncil was animated, from the high tone of au-  
 ity which the legates who presided in it  
 med, and from the implicit deference with  
 ch most of the members followed their direc-  
 s, the protestants conjectured with ease what  
 sions they might expect. It astonished them,  
 ever, to see forty prelates (for no greater  
 iber were yet assembled) assume authority as  
 esentatives of the universal church, and pro-  
 to determine the most important points  
 doctri


' manifesto, containing a renewal of  
against its meeting, together with  
which induced them to decline its ju  
The pope and emperor, on their p  
little solicitous to quicken or add  
operations, as plainly discovered th  
ject of greater importance occupied  
ed them.

The protestants were not inattent  
cerned spectators of the motions of  
pontiff and of Charles, and they ente  
day more violent suspicions of thei  
in consequence of intelligence receiv  
ferent quarters of the machinations  
against them. The king of Engla  
them, that the emperor, having long  
exterminate their opinions, would no  
allow this interval of tranquillity and

ng between the pope and emperor. Confirmation of this they heard from the Countries, that Charles had issued or-though with every precaution which could the measure concealed, for raising troops there and in other parts of his dominions. a variety of information corroborating all their own jealousy or observation led them comprehend, left the protestants little reason to of the emperor's hostile intentions. Under expression, the deputies of the confederates *Reichsraethe* assembled at Francfort, and by communicating their intelligence and sentiments to each other, reciprocally heightened their sense of impending danger. But their union was such as their situation required, or the pressions of their enemies rendered necessary. The league had now subsisted ten years. Among its members, whose territories were intermingled with each other, and who, according to custom of Germany, had created an infinite number of mutual rights and claims by intermarriages, and contracts of different kinds, seeds of jealousy and discord had unavoidably

Some of the confederates, being connected with the duke of Brunswick, were highly offended with the landgrave, on account of the conduct with which he had treated that rash and impetuous prince. Others taxed the elector of Brandenburg and landgrave, the heads of the league, with having involved the members in unnecessary and great expences by their profuseness or want of economy. The views, likewise, and temper of two princes, who, by their superior rank and authority, influenced and directed the

the whole body, being extremely different, rendered all its motions languid, at a time when the utmost vigour and dispatch were requisite. The landgrave, of a violent and enterprising temper, but not forgetful, amidst his zeal for religion, of the usual maxims of human policy, insisted that, as the danger which threatened them was manifest and unavoidable, they should have recourse to the most effectual expedient for securing their own safety, by courting the protection of the kings of France and England, or by joining in alliance with the protestant cantons of Switzerland, from whom they might expect such powerful and present assistance as their situation demanded. The elector, on the other hand, with the most upright intentions of any prince in that age, and with talents which might have qualified him abundantly for the administration of government in any tranquil period, was possessed with such



and rigid notions of that reformer, he refused to enter into any confederacy with Francis, because he was a persecutor of the truth; or to solicit the friendship of Henry, because he was no less impious and profane than the pope himself; or even to join in alliance with the Swiss, because they differed from the Germans in several essential articles of faith. This dissension, about a point of such consequence, produced its natural effects. Each secretly censured and reproached the other. The landgrave considered the elector as fettered by narrow prejudices, unworthy of a prince called to act a chief part in a scene of such importance. The elector suspected the landgrave of loose principles and ambitious views, which corresponded ill with the sacred cause wherein they were engaged. But though the elector's scruples prevented their timely application for foreign aid; and the jealousy or discontent of the other princes defeated a proposal for renewing their original confederacy, the term during which it was to continue in force being on the point of expiring; yet the sense of their common danger induced them to agree with regard to other points, particularly that they would never acknowledge the assembly of Trent as a lawful council, nor suffer the archbishop of Cologne to be oppressed on account of the steps which he had taken towards the reformation of his diocese<sup>e</sup>.

The landgrave, about this time, desirous of penetrating to the bottom of the emperor's intentions, wrote to Granvelle, whom he knew to be thoroughly acquainted with all his master's schemes, informing him of the several particular

<sup>e</sup> *Seck. l. iii. 566. 576. 613. Sleid. 355.*

which raised the suspicions of the protestants, and begging an explicit declaration of what they had to fear or to hope. Granvelle, in return, assured them, that the intelligence which they had received of the emperor's military preparations was exaggerated, and all their suspicions destitute of foundation; that though, in order to guard his frontiers against any insult of the French or English, he had commanded a small body of men to be raised in the Low-Countries, he was as solicitous as ever to maintain tranquillity in Germany<sup>f</sup>.

But the emperor's actions did not correspond with these professions of his minister. For instead of appointing men of known moderation and a pacific temper to appear in defence of the catholic doctrines at the conference which had been agreed on, he made choice of fierce bigots, attached to their own system with a blind obstinacy, that rendered all hope of a reconciliation desperate. Malvanda, a Spanish divine, who took upon him the conduct of the debate on the part of the catholics, managed it with all the subtle dexterity of a scholastic metaphysician, more studious to perplex his adversaries than to convince them, and more intent on palliating error than on discovering truth. The protestants, filled with indignation, as well at his sophistry as at some regulations which the emperor endeavoured to impose on the disputants, broke off the conference abruptly, being now fully convinced that, in all his late measures, the emperor could have no other view than to amuse them, and to gain time for ripening his own schemes<sup>g</sup>.

## B O O K VIII.

appearances of danger daily increased, the tempest which had been so long ag was ready to break forth in all its violence against the protestant church, Luther was by a seasonable death, from feeling or ing its destructive rage. Having gone, in a declining state of health, and during a long season, to his native city of Eysleben, to compose, by his authority, a dissent among the counts of Mansfield, he was seized with a violent inflammation in his stomach, which in a few days put an end to his life, in the thirty-third year of his age [Feb. 18]. As he was raised up by Providence to be the author of one of the greatest and most interesting revolutions recorded in history, there is not any person whose character has been drawn with such opposite colours. In his own age, or country, struck with horror and inflamed with rage when they saw with what a daring hand he overturned every thing which they held to be sacrosanct and valued as beneficial, imputed to him not only the defects and vices of a man, but the crimes of a dæmon. The other, warmed by admiration and gratitude, which they thought he merited as the restorer of light and life to the Christian church, ascribed to him powers above the condition of humanity, and viewed his actions with a veneration bordered by the immediate inspiration of



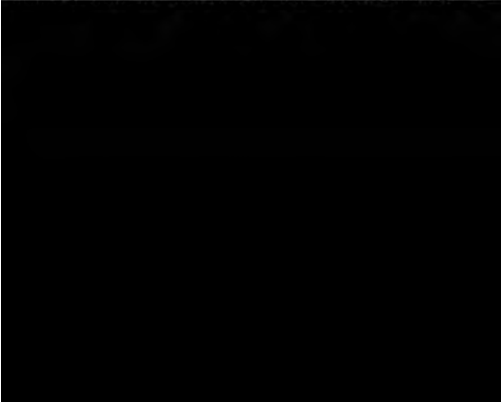
his own conduct, not the undistinguishing  
 are or the exaggerated praise of his conten-  
 ries, that ought to regulate the opinions  
 present age concerning him. Zeal for what  
 regarded as truth, undaunted intrepidity to  
 maintain his own system, abilities, both natural  
 acquired, to defend his principles, and un-  
 ried industry in propagating them, are  
 which shine so conspicuously in every part  
 his behaviour, that even his enemies must  
 now him to have possessed them in an eminent  
 degree. To these may be added, with equal  
 justice, such purity and even austerity of man-  
 ners, as became one who assumed the character  
 of a Reformer; such sanctity of life as suited the  
 doctrine which he delivered; and such perfect  
 disinterestedness as affords no slight presumption  
 of his sincerity. Superior to all selfish consid-  
 erations, a stranger to the elegancies of life, and  
 despising its pleasures, he left the honours and  
 emoluments of the church to his disciples, con-  
 taining satisfied himself in his original station  
 professor in the university, and pastor of the  
 of Wittemberg, with the moderate appointments  
 annexed to these offices. His extraordinary  
 qualities were allayed with no inconsiderable  
 mixture of human frailty and human passions.  
 These, however, were of such a nature  
 they cannot be imputed to malevolence or  
 corruption of heart, but seem to have taken  
 rise from the same source with many of  
 his virtues. His mind, forcible and vehement  
 in its operations, roused by great objects  
 agitated by violent passions, broke out, on  
 occasions, with an impetuosity which

men of feeble spirits, or such as are placed in a more tranquil situation. By carrying some praise-worthy dispositions to excess, he bordered sometimes on what was culpable, and was often betrayed into actions which exposed him to censure. His confidence that his own opinions were well founded, approached to arrogance; his courage in asserting them, to rashness; his firmness in adhering to them, to obstinacy; and his zeal in confuting his adversaries, to rage and scurrility. Accustomed himself to consider every thing as subordinate to truth, he expected the same deference for it from other men; and without making any allowances for their timidity or prejudices, he poured forth against such as disappointed him in this particular, a torrent of invective mingled with contempt. Regardless of any distinction of rank or character when his doctrines were attacked, he chastised all his adversaries indiscriminately, with the same rough hand; neither the royal dignity of Henry VIII. nor the eminent learning and abilities of Erasmus, screened them from the same gross abuse with which he treated Tetzels or Eccius.

But these indecencies of which Luther was guilty, must not be imputed wholly to the violence of his temper. They ought to be charged in part on the manners of the age. Among a rude people, unacquainted with those maxims, which, by putting continual restraint on the passions of individuals, have polished society, and rendered it agreeable, disputes of every kind were managed with heat, and strong emotions were uttered in their natural language without

reserve or delicacy. At the same time, the works of learned men were all composed in Latin, and they were not only authorized, by the example of eminent writers in that language, to use their antagonists with the most illiberal scurrility; but, in a dead tongue, indecencies of every kind appear less shocking than in a living language, whose idioms and phrases seem gross, because they are familiar.

In passing judgment upon the characters of men, we ought to try them by the principles and maxims of their own age, not by those of another. For, although virtue and vice are at all times the same, manners and customs vary continually. Some parts of Luther's behaviour, which to us appear most culpable, gave no disgust to his contemporaries. It was even by some of those qualities, which we are now apt to blame, that he was fitted for accomplishing the



see a great part of Europe embrace his doctrines ; and to shake the foundation of the papal throne, before which the mightiest monarchs had trembled, he discovered, on some occasions, symptoms of vanity and self-applause. He must have been, indeed, more than man, if, upon contemplating all that he actually accomplished, he had never felt any sentiment of this kind rising in his breast \*.

Some time before his death he felt his strength declining, his constitution being worn out by a prodigious multiplicity of business, added to the labour of discharging his ministerial function with unremitting diligence, to the fatigue of constant study, besides the composition of works as voluminous as if he had enjoyed uninterrupted leisure and retirement. His natural intrepidity did not forsake him at the approach of death ; his last conversation with his friends was concerning the happiness reserved for good men in a fu-

\* A remarkable instance of this, as well as of a certain singularity and elevation of sentiment, is found in his Last Will. Though the effects which he had to bequeath were very inconsiderable, he thought it necessary to make a Testament, but scorned to frame it with the usual legal formalities. *Notus sum, says he, in cœlo, in terra, & inferno, & auctoritatem ad hoc sufficientem habeo, ut mihi soli credatur, cum Deus mihi, homini licet damnabili, et miserabili peccatori, ex paterna misericordia Evangelium filii sui crediderit, dederitque ut in eo verax & fidelis fuerim, ita ut multi in mundo illud per me acceperint, & me pro Doctore veritatis agnoverint, spreto banno papæ, Cæsaris, regum, principum & sacerdotum, immo omnium dæmonum odio. Quidni, igitur, ad dispositionem hanc, in re exigua, sufficiat, si ad sit manus meæ testimonium, & dici possit, hæc scripsit D. Martinus Luther, Notarius Dei, & testis Evangelii ejus* *Sec. l. iii. p. 651.*

neither party sufficiently considering doctrines were now so firmly rooted, a condition to flourish independent of which had first planted them. was celebrated by order of the Saxony with extraordinary pomp several children by his wife Catherine who survived him. Towards the last century, there were in Saxony his descendants in decent and honorable<sup>b</sup>.

The emperor, meanwhile, pursuing of dissimulation with which he had plying every art to amuse the people to quiet their fears and jealousies. In pose he contrived to have an interview landgrave of Hesse, the most active confederates. and the most suspicious

ons, and sent him away fully satisfied  
 ific intentions. This artifice was of  
 ntage, and effectually answered the  
 r which it was employed. The land-  
 on his leaving Spire, where he had  
 ted to this interview, went to Worms,  
 : Smalkaldic confederates were as-  
 nd gave them such a flattering repre-  
 of the emperor's favourable disposition  
 em, that they, who were too apt, as  
 the temper of the German nation,  
 ie genius of all great associations or  
 men, to be slow, and dilatory, and  
 in their deliberations, thought there  
 effity of taking any immediate measures  
 nger, which appeared to be distant or  
 e.

ents, however, soon occurred, as stag-  
 credit which the protestants had given  
 peror's declarations. The council of  
 ough still composed of a small number  
 and Spanish prelates, without a single  
 om many of the kingdoms, which it  
 right of binding by its decrees, being  
 of its long inactivity, proceeded now  
 articles of the greatest importance.  
 begun with examining the first and  
 t in controversy between the church of  
 d the reformers, concerning the rule  
 ould be held as supreme and decisive in  
 f faith, the council, by its infallible  
 determined [Apr. 8], "That the  
 which the designation of Apocryphal

hath been given, are of equal authority with those which were received by the Jews and primitive Christians into the sacred canon ; that the traditions handed down from the apostolic age, and preserved in the church, are entitled to as much regard as the doctrines and precepts which the inspired authors have committed to writing ; that the Latin translation of the Scriptures, made or revised by St. Jerome, and known by the name of the *Vulgate* translation, should be read in churches, and appealed to in the schools as authentic and canonical." Against all who disclaimed the truth of these tenets, anathemas were denounced in the name and by the authority of the Holy Ghost. The decision of these points, which undermined the main foundation of the Lutheran system, was a plain warning to the protestants what judgment they might expect when the council should have leisure to take into con-

papal bull was issued [Apr. 16], depriving of his ecclesiastical dignity, inflicting on him the sentence of excommunication, and abrogating his subjects from the oath of allegiance which they had taken to him as their civil superior. The countenance which he had given to Lutheran heresy was the only crime imputed to him, as well as the only reason assigned for the extraordinary severity of this decree. Protestants could hardly believe that Paul, so zealous soever he might be to defend the established system, or to humble those who resisted it, would have ventured to proceed to such hostilities against a prince and elector of the empire, without having previously secured such powerful protection as would render his censure something more than an impotent and despicable object of resentment. They were of course deeply shocked at this sentence against the archbishop, regarding it as a sure indication of the malevolent intentions not only of the pope, but of the emperor, against the whole party<sup>d</sup>.

Upon this fresh revival of their fears, with the violence as is natural to men roused from a security, and conscious of their having been deceived, Charles saw that now it became necessary to throw aside the mask, and to declare openly what part he determined to act. By a series of artifice and fallacy, he had gained much time, that his measures, though not altogether ripe for execution, were in great forwardness. The pope, by his proceedings against the elector of Cologne, as well as by the de-

*Ibid.* 354: F. Paul, 155. Pallavic. 224.



crees of the council, had precipitated matters into such a situation, as rendered a breach between the emperor and the protestants almost unavoidable. Charles had therefore no choice left him, but either to take part with them in overturning what the see of Rome had determined, or to support the authority of the church openly by force of arms. Nor did the pope think it enough to have brought the emperor under a necessity of acting; he pressed him to begin his operations immediately, and to carry them on with such vigour as could not fail of securing success. Transported by his zeal against heresy, Paul forgot all the prudent and cautious maxims of the papal see, with regard to the danger of extending the Imperial authority beyond due bounds; and in order to crush the Lutherans, he was willing to contribute towards raising up a master that might one day prove formidable to himself as well as to the rest of Italy.

But, besides the certain expectation of assistance from the pope, Charles was now secure from any danger of interruption to his designs by the Turkish arms. His negotiations at the Porte, which he had carried on with great assiduity since the peace of Crespy, were on the point of being terminated in such a manner as he desired. Solymán, partly in compliance with the French king, who, in order to avoid the disagreeable obligation of joining the emperor against his ancient ally, laboured with great zeal to bring about an accommodation between them, and partly from its being necessary to turn his arms towards the east, where the Persians threatened to

ons, consented without difficulty  
ive years. The chief article of  
each should retain possession of  
held in Hungary; and Ferdin-  
ance to the pride of the sultan,  
y an annual tribute of fifty thou-

upon the aid and concurrence of  
hemselves that the emperor re-  
reatest confidence. The Germanic  
, was of such vast strength, as to  
it were united, and that it was  
ing its own force that he could  
it. Happily for him, the union  
embers in this great system was  
whole frame was so closely com-  
different parts tended so violently  
ion from each other, that it was  
e for it, on any important emer-  
in a general or vigorous effort.  
uncture, the sources of discord  
nd as various, as had been known

The Roman catholics, animated  
nce of their religion proportional  
with which it had been attacked,  
second any attempt to humble  
, who had overturned it in many  
endangered it in more. John  
Brandenburg, as well as several  
ncensed at the haughtiness and  
sch the duke of Brunswick had  
r the confederates of Smalkalde,

*ist. Hun. 180. Mem. de Ribier,*

were impatient to rescue him, and to be revenged on them. Charles observed, with satisfaction, the working of those passions in their minds, and counting on them as sure auxiliaries whenever he should think it proper to act, he found it, in the mean time, more necessary to moderate than to inflame their rage.

Such was the situation of affairs, such the discernment with which the emperor foresaw and provided for every event, when the diet of the empire met at Ratisbon. Many of the Roman catholic members appeared there in person, but most of the confederates of Smalkalde, under pretence of being unable to bear the expence occasioned by the late unnecessary frequency of such assemblies, sent only deputies. Their jealousy of the emperor, together with an apprehension that violence might, perhaps, be employed, in order to force their approbation of what he should propose in the diet, was the true cause of their absence. The speech with which the emperor opened the diet was extremely artful. After professing, in common form, his regard for the prosperity of the Germanic body, and declaring, that, in order to bestow his whole attention upon the re-establishment of its order and tranquillity, he had at present abandoned all other cares, rejected the most pressing solicitations of his other subjects to reside among them, and postponed affairs of the greatest importance; he took notice, with some disapprobation, that his disinterested example had not been imitated; many members of chief consideration having neglected to attend an assembly to which he had repaired with such manifest inconvenience.

to himself. He then mentioned their unhappy dissensions about religion; lamented the ill success of his past endeavours to compose them; complained of the abrupt dissolution of the late conference, and craved their advice with regard to the best and most effectual method of restoring union to the churches of Germany, together with that happy agreement in articles of faith, which their ancestors had found to be of no less advantage to their civil interest, than becoming their Christian profession.

By this gracious and popular method of consulting the members of the diet, rather than of obtruding upon them any opinion of his own, besides the appearance of great moderation, and the merit of paying much respect to their judgment, the emperor dexterously avoided discovering his own sentiments, and reserved to himself, as his only part, that of carrying into execution what they should recommend. Nor was he less secure of such a decision as he wished to obtain, by referring it wholly to themselves. The Roman catholic members, prompted by their own zeal, or prepared by his intrigues, joined immediately in representing that the authority of the council now met at Trent ought to be supreme in all matters of controversy; that all Christians should submit to its decrees as the infallible rule of their faith; and therefore they besought him to exert the power, with which he was invested by the Almighty, in protecting that assembly, and in compelling the protestants to acquiesce in its determinations. The protestants, on the other hand, presented a memorial in which, after repeating their objections to t

council of Trent, they proposed, as the only effectual method of deciding the points in dispute, that either a free general council should be assembled in Germany, or a national council of the empire should be called, or a select number of divines should be appointed out of each party to examine and define articles of faith. They mentioned the recesses of several diets favourable to this proposition, and which had afforded them the prospect of terminating all their differences in this amicable manner; they now conjured the emperor not to depart from his former plan, and by offering violence to their consciences, to bring calamities upon Germany, the very thought of which must fill every lover of his country with horror. The emperor receiving this paper with a contemptuous smile, paid no farther regard to it. Having already taken his final resolution, and perceiving that nothing but force could compel them to acquiesce in it, he dispatched the cardinal of Trent to Rome [June 9], in order to conclude an alliance with the pope, the terms of which were already agreed on; he commanded a body of troops, levied on purpose in the Low-Countries, to advance towards Germany; he gave commissions to several officers for raising men in different parts of the empire; he warned John and Albert of Brandenburg, that now was the proper time of exerting themselves, in order to rescue their ally, Henry of Brunswick, from captivity <sup>f</sup>.

All these things could not be transacted without the observation and knowledge of the pro-

ents. The secret was now in many hands; er whatever veil the emperor still affected to deal his designs, his officers kept no such terious reserve; and his allies and subjects ce out his intentions plainly. Alarmed with orts of this kind from every quarter, as well with the preparations for war which they ld not but observe, the deputies of the con- rates demanded audience of the emperor, , in the name of their masters, required to w whether these military preparations were ied on by his command, and for what end, against what enemy? To a question put in a tone, and at a time when facts were be- e too notorious to be denied, it was necessary give an explicit answer. Charles owned the rs which he had issued, and professing his pose not to molest on account of religion e who should act as dutiful subjects; de- ed, that he had nothing in view but to main- the rights and prerogatives of the Imperial uity, and by punishing some factious members, preserve the ancient constitution of the ire from being impaired or dissolved by r irregular and licentious conduct. Though emperor did not name the persons whom he ged with such high crimes, and destined to be objects of his vengeance, it was obvious he had the elector of Saxony and Land- e of Hesse in view. Their deputies consi- ing what he had said, as a plain declaration is hostile intentions, immediately retired  
*at Ratisbon &c.*

The cardinal of Trent found it no difficult matter to treat with the pope, who having at length brought the emperor to adopt that plan which he had long recommended, assented with eagerness to every article that he proposed. The league was signed [July 26] a few days after the cardinal's arrival at Rome. The pernicious heresies which abounded in Germany, the obstinacy of the protestants in rejecting the holy council assembled at Trent, and the necessity of maintaining sound doctrine, together with good order in the church, are mentioned as the motives of this union between the contracting parties. In order to check the growth of these evils, and to punish such as had impiously contributed to spread them, the emperor, having long and without success made trial of gentler remedies, engaged instantly to take the field with a sufficient army, that he might compel all who disowned the council, or had apostatized from the religion of their forefathers, to return into the bosom of the church, and submit with due obedience to the holy see. He likewise bound himself not to conclude a peace with them during six months without the pope's consent, nor without assigning him his share in any conquests which should be made upon them; and that even after this period he should not agree to any accommodation which might be detrimental to the church, or to the interest of religion. On his part, the pope stipulated to deposit a large sum in the bank of Venice towards defraying the expence of the war; to maintain, at his own charge, during the space of six months, twelve thousand foot, and five hundred horse; to grant the emperor

peror, for one year, half of the ecclesiastical revenues throughout Spain; to authorize him, by a bull, to alienate as much of the lands, belonging to religious houses in that country, as would amount to the sum of five hundred thousand crowns; and to employ not only spiritual censures, but military force, against any prince who should attempt to interrupt or defeat the execution of this treaty <sup>h</sup>.

Notwithstanding the explicit terms in which the extirpation of heresy was declared to be the object of the war which was to follow upon this treaty, Charles still endeavoured to persuade the Germans that he had no design to abridge their religious liberty, but that he aimed only at vindicating his own authority, and repressing the insolence of such as had encroached upon it. With this view, he wrote circular letters in the same strain with his answer to the deputies at Ratisbon, to most of the free cities, and to several of the princes who had embraced the protestant doctrines. In these he complained loudly, but in general terms, of the contempt into which the Imperial dignity had fallen, and of the presumptuous as well as disorderly behaviour of some members of the empire. He declared that he now took arms, not in a religious, but in a civil quarrel; not to oppress any who continued to behave as quiet and dutiful subjects, but to humble the arrogance of such as had thrown off all sense of that subordination in which they were placed under him as head of the Germanic body. Gross as this deception was, and mani-

<sup>h</sup> *Sleid.* 381. *Pallav.* 255. *Dumont Corps Diplom.* 11



fest as it might have appeared to all who considered the emperor's conduct with attention, it became necessary for him to make trial of its effect; and such was the confidence and dexterity with which he employed it, that he derived the most solid advantages from this artifice. If he had avowed at once an intention of overturning the protestant church, and of reducing all Germany under its former state of subjection to the papal see, none of the cities or princes who had embraced the new opinions could have remained neutral after such a declaration, far less could they have ventured to assist the emperor in such an enterprize. Whereas by concealing, and even disclaiming any intention of that kind, he not only saved himself from the danger of being overwhelmed by a general confederacy of all the protestant states, but he furnished the timid with an excuse for continuing inactive, and the designing or interested with a pretext for joining him, without exposing themselves to the infamy of abandoning their own principles, or taking part openly in suppressing them. At the same time the emperor well knew, that if, by their assistance, he were enabled to break the power of the elector of Saxony and the Landgrave, he might afterwards prescribe what terms he pleased to the feeble remains of a party without union, and destitute of leaders, who would then regret, too late, their mistaken confidence in him, and their inconsiderate desertion of their associates.

*The pope, by a sudden and unforeseen display of his zeal, had well nigh disconcerted this plan*  
*which the emperor had formed with so much*

art. Proud of having been the author of a formidable league against the Lutheran and happy in thinking that the glory of it was reserved for his pontificate, he drew the articles of his treaty with the emperor in order to demonstrate the pious intention of their confederacy, as well as to display his zeal, which prompted him to make such extraordinary efforts for maintaining the faith in Germany. Not satisfied with this, he soon after issued a bull, containing most liberal promises of assistance to all who should engage in this holy cause, together with warm exhortations to the emperor to could not bear a part in it themselves, to use the fervour of their prayers, and the fruits of their mortifications, that they might obtain the blessing of Heaven upon those who undertook it <sup>1</sup>. Nor was it his zeal alone which prompted the pope to make declarations so inconsistent with the account which the emperor himself gave of his motives for taking arms. He was scandalized at Charles's dissimulation in this cause; at his seeming to be ashamed of his zeal for the church, and at his endeavouring to make that pass for a political contest, which ought to have gloried in as a war that had no other object than the defence of religion. As much solicitude, therefore, as the emperor was emboured to disguise the purpose of the confederacy, did the pope endeavour to publish their intentions, in order that they might come at once to an open rupture with the protestants, that all reconciliation might be cut off, and that

<sup>1</sup> Du Mont Corps Diplom.

Charles might be under fewer temptations, and have it less in his power than at present, to betray the interests of the church by any accommodation beneficial to himself <sup>k</sup>.


The emperor, though not a little offended at the pope's indiscretion or malice in making this discovery, continued boldly to pursue his own plan, and to assert his intentions to be no other than what he had originally avowed. Several of the protestant states, whom he had previously gained, thought themselves justified, in some measure, by his declarations, for abandoning their associates, and even for giving assistance to him.

But these artifices did not impose on the greater and sounder part of the protestant confederates. They clearly perceived it to be against the reformed religion that the emperor had taken arms, and that not only the suppression of it, but the extinction of the German liberties, would be the certain consequence of his obtaining such an entire superiority as would enable him to execute his schemes in their full extent. They determined, therefore, to prepare for their own defence, and neither to renounce those religious truths, to the knowledge of which they had attained by means so wonderful, nor to abandon those civil rights which had been transmitted to them by their ancestors. In order to give the necessary directions for this purpose, their deputies met at Ulm, soon after their abrupt departure from Ratisbon. Their deliberations were now conducted with such vigour and unanimity,

<sup>k</sup> F. Paul, 188. Thuan. Hist. i. 61.

minent danger which threatened them. The contingent of troops, which each confederate was to furnish, having been in the original treaty of union, orders were given bringing them immediately into the field. It was, however, not very sensible, at last, that through the prejudices of some of their members, and the want of security of others, they had not so long to strengthen themselves by alliances, they now applied with great success to the Venetians and Swiss.

The Venetians they represented the intention of overturning the present system of government, and of raising himself to absolute monarchy in that country by means of foreign force supported by the pope; they warned them how this event would prove to the liberties of Italy, that by suffering Charles to acquire authority in the one country, they would give him his dominion to be no less despotic in the other; they besought them, therefore, not to permit a passage through their territories to the pope, which ought to be treated as comestibles, because by subduing Germany they would be a chain for the rest of Europe. These arguments had not escaped the sagacity of those republicans. They had communicated their objections to the pope, and had endeavoured to prevent him from an alliance, which tended to increase the power of a potentate, whose power they already knew to be boundless. But they found Paul so eager in the prosecution of his plan, that he disregarded all their representations. This attempt to alarm the pope



draw upon themselves the whole weight as well as of the emperor's indignation. For the same reason they declined lending a sum of money, which the elector of Saxony and the emperor proposed to borrow of them, towards the war <sup>m</sup>.

The demands of the confederates of Switzerland were not confined to the obstruction of the entrance of foreigners into Germany: they required of them, as the nearest neighbours and closest allies of the empire, to interpose their wonted vigour for the preservation of it, and not to stand as inactive spectators, while their brethren were oppressed and enslaved. With whatever zeal some of the cantons have been disposed to act when the cause of reformation was in danger, the Helvetic Republic was so divided with regard to religi-

eing disappointed in both these applications, protestants, not long after, had recourse to kings of France and England; the approach of either either overcoming the elector of Saxony's wishes, or obliging him to yield to the importunities of his associates. The situation of the two archs flattered them with hopes of success. Though hostilities between them had continued some time after the peace of Crespy, they were weary at last of a war, attended with no great advantage to either, and had lately terminated all their differences by a peace concluded at Ampe near Ardres. Francis having with difficulty procured his allies, the Scots, to be included in the treaty, in return for that favour he engaged to pay a great sum, which he demanded as due to him on several accounts, and he left Boulogne in the hands of the English as a pledge for his faithful performance of that article. But though the re-establishment of peace seemed to leave the two monarchs at liberty to turn their attention towards Germany, unfortunate were the protestants, that they derived no immediate advantage from this circumstance. Henry appeared unwilling to enter into alliance with them, but on such conditions would render him not only the head, but the principal director of their league; a pre-eminence, as the bonds of union or interest between them were but feeble, and as he differed from them so widely in his religious sentiments, they were not inclined to admit of. Francis, more fully inclined by political considerations to

° Rymer, xv. 93. Herbert, 258.

afford them assistance, found his kingdom so much exhausted by a long war, and was so much afraid of irritating the pope, by entering into close union with excommunicated heretics, that he durst not undertake the protection of the Smalkaldic league. By this ill-timed caution, or by a superstitious deference to scruples, to which at other times he was not much addicted, he lost the most promising opportunity of mortifying and distressing his rival, which presented itself during his whole reign.

But, notwithstanding their ill success in their negotiations with foreign courts, the confederates found no difficulty at home, in bringing a sufficient force into the field. Germany abounded at that time in inhabitants; the feudal institutions, which subsisted in full force, enabled the nobles to call out their numerous vassals, and to put them in motion on the shortest warning; the martial spirit of the Germans, not broken or enervated by the introduction of commerce and arts, had acquired additional vigour during the continual wars in which they had been employed, for half a century, either in the pay of the emperors or the kings of France. Upon every opportunity of entering into service, they were accustomed to run eagerly to arms; and to every standard that was erected, volunteers flocked from all quarters *P.* Zeal seconded, on this occasion, their native ardour. Men on whom the doctrine of the reformation had made that deep impression which accompanies truth when first discovered, prepared to maintain it with proportional

gour; and among a warlike people it appeared famous to remain inactive, when the defence of religion was the motive for taking arms. A discontent combined with all these circumstances facilitating the levy of soldiers among the catholics. A considerable number of German soldiers, the pay of France, being dismissed by the king on the prospect of peace with England, remained in a body the standard of the protestants. By such a concurrence of causes, they were enabled to assemble in a few weeks an army composed of seventy thousand foot and fifteen thousand horse, provided with a train of an hundred and twenty cannon, eight hundred ammunition waggon, eight thousand beasts of burden, and six thousand pioneers. This army, one of the most numerous, and undoubtedly the best appointed, any which had been levied in Europe during that century, did not require the united effort of the whole protestant body to raise it. The elector of Saxony, the landgrave of Hesse, the duke of Wurtemberg, the princes of Anhalt, and the imperial cities of Augsburg, Ulm, and Strasbourg, were the only powers which contributed towards this great armament: the elector of Cologne, of Brandenburg, and the count Palatine, overawed by the emperor's threats, or deterred by his professions, remained neuter. John Sigismund of Brandenburg Barcith, and Albert of Brandenburg Anspach, though both early converts to Lutheranism, entered openly into the emperor's service, under pretext of having ob-

an. l. i. 68.

r Ib. l. i. 601. Ludovici ab  
*unigenita Commentariorum del Bel. Germ. lib. duo*  
 2. 12mo. p. 13, a.

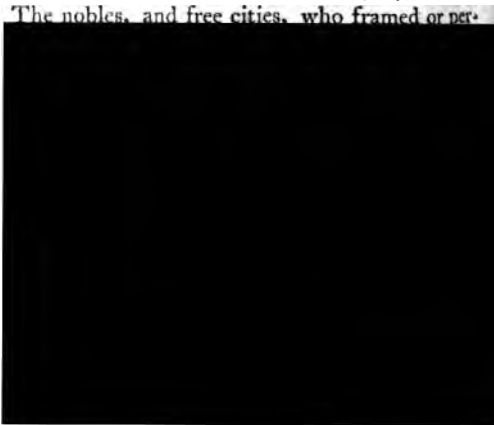


force. Shut up in Ratisbon, a town of little strength, whose inhabitants, being Protestants, would have been more ready than to assist him, with only three thousand Swiss foot, who had served in Hungary, five thousand Germans who had joined from different parts of the empire, he must be overwhelmed by the approach of such a formidable army, which he could not fight, he even hoped to retreat from it in safety. The pope's troops, though in full march, had hardly reached the frontiers of the countries which he expected from the Emperor. The Emperor's forces had not yet begun to move, even far from being complete. He, however, called for more immediate succour, did it seem practicable for him to wait for distant auxiliaries, with whom his own

of moderation and equity; they strive to gain partisans by seeming to adhere strictly to known forms; nor can they be brought, at once, to violate those established institutions, which in times of tranquillity they have been accustomed to reverence; hence their proceedings are often feeble or dilatory, when they ought to be most vigorous and decisive. Influenced by those considerations, which, happily for the peace of society, operate powerfully on the human mind, the confederates could not think of throwing off that allegiance which they owed to the head of the empire, or of turning their arms against him without one solemn appeal more to his candour, and to the impartial judgment of their fellow-subjects. For this purpose, they addressed a letter to the emperor [July 15], and a manifesto to all the inhabitants of Germany. The tenour of both was the same. They represented their own conduct with regard to civil affairs as dutiful and submissive; they mentioned the inviolable union in which they had lived with the emperor, as well as the many and recent marks of his good-will and gratitude wherewithal they had been honoured; they asserted religion to be the sole cause of the violence which the emperor now meditated against them; and in proof of this produced many arguments to convince those who were so weak as to be deceived by the artifices with which he endeavoured to cover his real intentions; they declared their own resolution to risk every thing in maintenance of their religious rights, and foretold the dissolution of the German constitution, if the emperor should finally prevail against them<sup>t</sup>.

<sup>t</sup> Sleid. 334.

Charles, though in such a perilous situation as might have inspired him with moderate sentiments, appeared as inflexible and haughty as if his affairs had been in the most prosperous state. His only reply to the address and manifesto of the protestants, was to publish the ban of the empire [July 20], against the elector of Saxony and landgrave of Hesse, their leaders, and against all who should dare to assist them. By this sentence, the ultimate and most rigorous one which the German jurisprudence has provided for the punishment of traitors, or enemies to their country, they were declared rebels and outlaws, and deprived of every privilege which they enjoyed as members of the Germanic body; their goods were confiscated; their subjects absolved from their oath of allegiance; and it became not only lawful but meritorious to invade their territories. The nobles, and free cities, who framed or per-



lished church, or their conduct with regard to religion; he affected to assign for it reasons only civil, and those too expressed in such general and ambiguous terms, without specifying nature or circumstances of their guilt, as rendered it more like an act of despotic power than of a legal and limited jurisdiction. Nor did it altogether from choice, or to conceal his intentions, that Charles had recourse to the ambiguity of general expressions; but he durst not mention too particularly the causes of his sentence, as every action which he could have charged on the elector and landgrave as a crime, might have been employed with equal justice to condemn many of the protestants whom he still pretended to consider as faithful subjects, and whom he could have been extremely imprudent to alarm by his guilt.

The confederates, now perceiving all hopes of accommodation to be at an end, had only to see whether they would submit without resistance to the emperor's will, or proceed to open hostilities. They were not destitute either of courage or spirit, or of resolution to make the proper choice. A few days after the ban of the empire was published, they, according to the custom of that age, sent a herald to the Imperial court, with a solemn declaration of war against Charles, to whom they no longer gave any other name than that of pretended emperor, and renounced all allegiance, homage, or duty which he might claim, or which they had hitherto rendered to him. But previous to this formality, *of their troops had begun to act.* The land of a considerable body of men raised by

the city of Augsburg having been garrisoned by a  
balian Schertel, a foldier of fortune, and  
booty that he got when the Imperator  
conquered Rome, together with the reward  
for his service, had acquired wealth and authority  
which placed him on a level with the chief  
men and nobles : that gallant veteran refused  
to be separated from his regiment, and  
he joined the main body of the confederates  
to attempt something suitable to his ambition  
and to the expectation of his countrymen.  
As the pope's forces were hastening towards  
Germany in order to penetrate into Germany  
by the narrow passes through the mountain  
ranges across that country, he advanced with  
the utmost rapidity, and seized Ehrenbreit-  
stein, two strong castles which commanded  
the principal defiles. Without stopping  
he continued his march towards the Rhine,  
getting possession of which he would  
have enabled the Italians to stop short, and  
no body of men could have resisted all


Ehrenberg and Cuffstein, and these, having no hopes of being relieved, surrendered, after a short resistance \* \*.

Nor was the recalling of Schertel the only error of which the confederates were guilty. As the supreme command of their army was committed, in terms of the league of Smalkalde, to the elector of Saxony and landgrave of Hesse with equal power, all the inconveniencies arising from a divided and co-ordinate authority, which is always of fatal consequence in the operations of war, were immediately felt. The elector, though intrepid in his own person to excess, and most ardently zealous in the cause, was slow in deliberating, uncertain as well as irresolute in his determinations, and constantly preferred measures which were cautious and safe, to such as were bold or decisive. The landgrave, of a more active and enterprising nature, formed all his resolutions with promptitude, wished to execute

\* Seckend. lib. ii. 70. *Adriani historia di suoi Tempi*, lib. 335.

\* Seckendorf, the industrious author of the *Commentarius Apologeticus de Lutherismo*, whom I have so long and safely followed as my guide in German affairs, was a descendant from Schertel. With the care and solicitude of a German, who was himself of noble birth, Seckendorf has published a long digression concerning his ancestor, calculated chiefly to shew how Schertel was ennobled, and his posterity allied to many of the most ancient families in the empire. Among other curious particulars, he gives us an account of his wealth, the chief source of which was the plunder he got at Rome. His landed estate alone was sold by his grandsons for six hundred thousand florins. By this we may form some idea of the riches amassed by the Condottieri, or commanders of mercenary bands in that age. At the taking of Rome Schertel was only a captain. Seckend. lib. ii. 7

them with spirit, and uniformly preferred such measures as tended to bring the contest to a speedy issue. Thus their maxims, with regard to the conduct of the war, differed as widely as those by which they were influenced in preparing for it. Such perpetual contrariety in their sentiments gave rise, imperceptibly, to jealousy and the spirit of contention. These multiplied the dissensions flowing from the incompatibility of their natural tempers, and rendered them more violent. The other members of the league considering themselves as independent, and subject to the elector and landgrave, only in consequence of the articles of a voluntary confederacy, did not long retain a proper veneration for commanders who proceeded with so little concord; and the numerous army of the protestants, like a vast machine whose parts are ill compacted, and which is destitute of any power sufficient to move



Landshut, and were soon followed by six thousand Spaniards of the veteran band stationed in Naples. The confederates, after Schertel's spirited but fruitless expedition, seem to have permitted these forces to advance unmolested to the place of rendezvous, without any attempt to attack either them or the emperor separately, or to prevent their junction\*. The Imperial army amounted now to thirty-six thousand men, and was still more formidable by the discipline and valour of the troops, than by their number. Avila, commendador of Alcantary, who had been present in all the wars carried on by Charles, and had served in the armies which gained the memorable victory at Pavia, which conquered Tunis, and invaded France, gives this the preference to any military force he had ever seen assembled†. Octavio Farnese, the pope's grandson, assisted by the ablest officers formed in the long wars between Charles and Francis, commanded the Italian auxiliaries. His brother, the cardinal Farnese, accompanied him as papal legate; and in order to give the war the appearance of a religious enterprize, he proposed to march at the head of the army, with a cross carried before him, and to publish indulgences wherever he came, to all who should give them any assistance, as had anciently been the practice in the crusades against the infidels. But this the emperor strictly prohibited, as inconsistent with all the declarations which he had made to the Germans of his own party; and the legate perceiving, to his astonishment, that the


\* *Adriani Istoria de suoi Tempi*, lib. v. 340.

† *Avila*, 18.



exercise of the protestant religion, the extirpation of which he considered as the sole object of the war, was publicly permitted in the Imperial camp, soon returned in disgust to Italy<sup>2</sup>.

The arrival of these troops enabled the emperor to send such a reinforcement to the garrison at Ratibon, that the confederates, relinquishing all hopes of reducing that town, marched towards Ingoldstadt on the Danube, near to which Charles was now encamped. They exclaimed loudly against the emperor's notorious violation of the laws and constitution of the empire, in having called in foreigners to lay waste Germany and to oppose its liberties. As, in that age, the dominion of the Roman see was so odious to the protestants, that the name of the pope alone was sufficient to inspire them with horror at any enterprize which he countenanced, and to raise in their minds the blackest suspicions, it came to be



some measure, by the behaviour of the papal troops, who, thinking nothing too rigorous towards heretics anathematized by the church, were guilty of great excesses in the territories of the Lutheran states, and aggravated the calamities of war, by mingling with it all the cruelty of bigoted zeal.

The first operations in the field, however, did not correspond with the violence of those passions which animated individuals. The emperor had prudently taken the resolution of avoiding an action with an enemy so far superior in number<sup>b</sup>, especially as he foresaw that nothing could keep a body composed of so many and such dissimilar members from falling to pieces, but the pressing to attack it with an inconsiderate precipitancy. The confederates, though it was no less evident that to them every moment's delay was pernicious, were still prevented by the weakness or division of their leaders from exerting that vigour, with which their situation, as well as the ardour of their soldiers, ought to have inspired them. On their arrival at Ingoldstadt [Aug. 29], they found the emperor in a camp not remarkable for strength, and surrounded only by a slight entrenchment. Before the camp lay a plain of such extent, as afforded sufficient space for drawing out their whole army, and bringing it to act at once. Every consideration should have determined them to have seized this opportunity of attacking the emperor; and their great superiority in numbers, the eagerness of *their troops*, together with the stability of th



forces, animated by the presence of t  
and conducted by the best officers  
would not venture upon an action  
thought to be so doubtful, as the att  
a body of veterans on ground which  
selves had chosen, and while cover  
fications which, though imperfect, v  
them no small advantage in the cor  
withstanding his hesitation and reme  
was agreed to advance towards the ei  
in battle array, in order to make a t  
by that insult, and by a furious canno  
they began, they could draw the  
out of their works. But the empe  
much sagacity to fall into this snare.  
to his own system with inflexible cor  
drawing up his soldiers behind the  
that they might be used to their

greatest danger, and amidst the warmest fire of the enemy's artillery, the most numerous that had hitherto been brought into the field by any army. Roused by his example, not a man quitted his ranks; it was thought infamous to discover any symptom of fear when the emperor appeared so intrepid; and the meanest soldier plainly perceived, that their declining the combat at present was not the effect of timidity in their general, but the result of a well-grounded caution. The confederates, after firing several hours on the Imperialists, with more noise and terror than execution, seeing no prospect of alluring them to fight on equal terms, retired to their own camp. The emperor employed the night with such diligence in strengthening his works, that the confederates, returning to the cannonade next day, found that, though they had now been willing to venture upon such a bold experiment, the opportunity of making an attack with advantage was lost<sup>c</sup>.

After such a discovery of the feebleness or irresolution of their leaders, and the prudence as well as firmness of the emperor's conduct, the confederates turned their whole attention towards preventing the arrival of a powerful reinforcement of ten thousand foot, and four thousand horse, which the count de Buren was bringing to the emperor from the Low-Countries. But though that general had to traverse such an extent of country; though his route lay through the territories of several states warmly disposed to


<sup>c</sup> *Seid.* 395. 397. *Avila*, 27, a. *Lamb. Hortens.* ap. *Scard.* ii.

loss<sup>d</sup> [Sept. 10].

Upon the arrival of the Flemings, i placed great confidence, the emperor some degree, his plan of operations, to act more upon the offensive, tho avoided a battle with the utmost ind made himself master of Neuburg, Di Donawert on the Danube; of Nord several other towns, situated on the siderable streams which fall into t river. By this he got the command extent of country, though not wit obliged to engage in several sharp en which the success was various, nor ing exposed, oftener than once, to th being drawn into a battle. In this whole autumn was spent; neither p any remarkable superiority over the

Though he waited with impatience for the accomplishment of his prediction, there was no prospect of that event being at hand. But he himself began to suffer from the want of forage and provisions; even the catholic provinces being so much incensed at the introduction of foreigners into the empire, that they furnished them with reluctance, while the camp of the confederates abounded with a profusion of all necessaries, which the zeal of their friends in the adjacent countries poured in with the utmost liberality and good-will. Great numbers of the Italians and Spaniards, unaccustomed to the climate or food of Germany, were become unfit for service through sickness<sup>f</sup>. Considerable arrears were now due to the troops, who had scarcely received any money from the beginning of the campaign; the emperor, experiencing on this, as well as on former occasions, that his jurisdiction was more extensive than his revenues, and that the former enabled him to assemble a greater number of soldiers, than the latter were sufficient to support. Upon all these accounts, he found it difficult to keep his army in the field; some of his ablest generals, and even the duke of Alva himself, persevering and obstinate as he usually was in the prosecution of every measure, advising him to disperse his troops into winter-quarters. But as the arguments urged against any plan which he had adopted, rarely made much impression upon the emperor, he paid no regard to their opinion, and determined to continue his efforts in order to weary out the confederates; being

<sup>f</sup> Camerar. ap. Freher. 483.



to the other; when an unexpected event occurred in the contest, and occasioned a fatal result in the affairs of the confederates.

Maurice of Saxony having insinuated himself into the emperor's confidence, by the means which have already been described, no soon were the hostilities ready to break out between the emperor and that monarch, whose prospects of ambition began to open. That portion of Saxony, which descended to him from his ancestors, was far from being in his aspiring mind; and he perceived the approach of civil war, as, at the revolutions and convulsions occasioned by the opportunities of acquiring additional power, which at other times are sought in vain, they themselves to an enterprising spirit. Maurice was thoroughly acquainted with the state

portional recompence. With this view, he had repaired to Ratibon in the month of May, under pretext of attending the diet; and after many conferences with Charles or his ministers, he, with the most mysterious secrecy, concluded a treaty, in which he engaged to concur in assisting the emperor, as a faithful subject; and Charles, in return, stipulated to bestow on him all the spoils of the elector of Saxony, his dignities as well as territories<sup>b</sup>. History hardly records any treaty that can be considered as a more manifest violation of the most powerful principles which ought to influence human actions. Maurice, a professed protestant, at a time when the belief of religion, as well as zeal for its interests, took strong possession of every mind, binds himself to contribute his assistance towards carrying on a war which had manifestly no other object than the extirpation of the protestant doctrines. He engages to take arms against his father-in-law, and to strip his nearest relation of his honours and dominions. He joins a dubious friend against a known benefactor, to whom his obligations were both great and recent. Nor was the prince who ventured upon all this, one of those audacious politicians, who, provided they can accomplish their ends, and secure their interest, avowedly disregard the most sacred obligations, and glory in contemning whatever is honourable or decent. Maurice's conduct, if the whole must be ascribed to policy, was more artful and masterly; he executed his plan in all its parts, and yet endea-

<sup>b</sup> *Haræi Annal. Brabant.* vol. i. 638. *Struvii Corp.* 1048. *Thuan.* 84.





of all who seem too much in pos-  
tread in dark and crooked paths in  
deceive others, he himself was, in  
deceived.

His first care, however, was to  
gagements into which he had ent  
emperor closely concealed: and  
master was he in the art of diffu  
the confederates, notwithstanding  
all connections with them, and h  
assiduity in paying court to the em  
to have entertained no suspicion o  
Even the elector of Saxony, when  
at the beginning of the campaign  
sociates, committed his dominions  
protection, which he, with an inf  
ance of friendship, readily under  
scarcely had the elector taken th

their possession, Charles required him, not only for his own sake, but upon the allegiance and duty which he owed to the head of the empire, instantly to seize and detain in his hands the forsaken estates of the elector; warning him, at the same time, that if he neglected to obey these commands, he should be held as accessory to the crimes of his kinsman, and be liable to the same punishment<sup>k</sup>.

This artifice, which it is probable Maurice himself suggested, was employed by him in order that his conduct towards the elector might seem a matter of necessity but not of choice, an act of obedience to his superior, rather than a voluntary invasion of the rights of his kinsman and ally. But in order to give some more specious appearance to this thin veil with which he endeavoured to cover his ambition, he, soon after his return from Ratibon, had called together the estates of his country; and representing to them that a civil war between the emperor and confederates of Smalkalde was now become unavoidable, desired their advice with regard to the part which he should act in that event. They having been prepared, no doubt, and tutored beforehand, and being desirous of gratifying their prince, whom they esteemed as well as loved, gave such counsel as they knew would be most agreeable; advising him to offer his mediation towards reconciling the contending parties; but if that were rejected, and he could obtain proper security for the protestant religion, they delivered as their opinion, that, in all other points, he

<sup>k</sup> Sleid. 391. Thuan. 84-



which he was threatened in case of c  
he acquainted them, that the conf  
should admit of his mediation,  
which had given him the most fa  
concern for their regard to religion  
interest in securing pos  
sessions, as well as th  
angers to obtain an est  
; and upon the whole, as th  
deliberation respected his subjects  
himself, he desired to know their sen  
he should steer in that difficult and  
juncture. The states, no less ob  
complaisant than formerly, professin  
reliance on the emperor's promises  
security for their religion, propos'd  
he had recourse to more violent m  
would write to the elector, exhortin

whom he was so deeply indebted; he treated with contempt his affectation of executing the Imperial ban, which he could not but know to be altogether void by the unconstitutional and arbitrary manner in which it had been issued; he besought him, not to suffer himself to be so far blinded by ambition, as to forget the obligations of honour and friendship, or to betray the protestant religion, the extirpation of which out of Germany, even by the acknowledgment of the pope himself, was the great object of the present war<sup>1</sup>.

But Maurice had proceeded too far to be diverted from pursuing his plan by reproaches or arguments. Nothing now remained but to execute with vigour, what he had hitherto carried on by artifice and dissimulation. Nor was his boldness in action inferior to his subtlety in contrivance. Having assembled about twelve thousand men, he suddenly invaded one part of the electoral provinces, while Ferdinand, with an army composed of Bohemians and Hungarians, overran the other. Maurice, in two sharp encounters, defeated the troops which the elector had left to guard his country; and improving these advantages to the utmost, made himself master of all the electorate, except Wittemberg, Gotha, and Eisenach, which being places of considerable strength, and defended by sufficient garrisons, refused to open their gates. The news of these rapid conquests soon reached the Imperial and confederate camps. In the former, satisfaction with an event, which it was foreseen would be

<sup>1</sup> *Sleid.* 405, &c. *Thuan.* 85. *Camerac* 484.  
producti

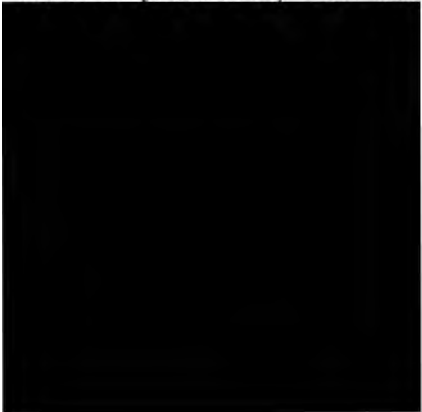
productive of the most important consequence was expressed by every possible demonstration. The latter was filled with astonishment and error. The name of Maurice was mentioned with execration, as an apostate from religion, betrayer of the German liberty, and a contemner of the most sacred and natural ties. Every thing that the rage or invention of the party could suggest, in order to blacken and render him odious, invectives, satires, and lampoons, the furious declamations of their preachers, together with the rude wit of their authors, were all employed against him. While he, confiding in his arts which he had so long practised, as if his actions could have admitted of any serious justification, published a manifesto, containing the same frivolous reasons for his conduct, which he had formerly alleged in the meeting of his estates and in his letter to the landgrave <sup>m</sup>.

The elector, upon the first intelligence of Maurice's motions, proposed to return home with troops for the defence of Saxony. But the deputies of the league, assembled at Ulm, prevailed on him, at that time, to remain with them, and to prefer the success of the common cause before the security of his own dominion. In length the sufferings and complaints of his subjects increased so much, that he discovered the utmost impatience to set out, in order to deliver them from the oppression of Maurice, and the cruelty of the Hungarians, who, having accustomed to that licentious and mercile war which was thought lawful ag

Turks, committed, wherever they came, the wildest acts of rapine and violence. This desire of the elector was so natural and so warmly urged, that the deputies at Ulm, though fully sensible of the unhappy consequences of dividing their army, durst not refuse their consent, how unwilling soever to grant it. In this perplexity, they repaired to the camp of the confederates at Giengen, on the Brenz, in order to consult their constituents. Nor were they less at a loss what to determine in this pressing emergence. But, after having considered seriously the open desertion of some of their allies; the scandalous lukewarmness of others, who had hitherto contributed nothing towards the war; the intolerable load which had fallen of consequence upon such members as were most zealous for the cause, or most faithful to their engagements; the ill success of all their endeavours to obtain foreign aid; the unusual length of the campaign; the rigour of the season; together with the great number of soldiers, and even officers, who had quitted the service on that account; they concluded that nothing could save them, but either the bringing the contest to the immediate decision of a battle, by attacking the Imperial army, or an accommodation of all their differences with Charles by a treaty. Such was the despondency and dejection which now oppressed the party, that of these two they chose what was most feeble and unmanly, empowering a minister of the elector of Brandenburg to propound overtures of peace in their name to the emperor.

*No sooner did Charles perceive this haughty confederacy, which had so lately threatened*

drive him out of Germany, condescend to make the first advances towards an agreement, than concluding their spirit to be gone, and union to be broken, he immediately assumed the tone of a conqueror; and, as if they had already been at his mercy, would not hear of any submission, but upon condition that the elector of Saxony should previously give up himself and his dominions absolutely to his disposal<sup>n</sup>. Nothing more intolerable or ignominious could have been prescribed, even in the worst situation of their affairs, it is no wonder that this proposal should be rejected by a party, which was so humbled and disconcerted than subdued. Though they refused to submit tamely to the emperor's will, they wanted spirit to pursue the only plan which could have preserved their independence; and forgetting that it was the loss of their troops in one body which had



The moment that the troops separated, the confederacy ceased to be the object of terror; and the members of it, who, while they composed part of a great body, had felt but little anxiety about their own security, began to tremble when they reflected that they now stood exposed singly to the whole weight of the emperor's vengeance. Charles did not allow them leisure to recover from their consternation, or to form any new schemes of union. As soon as the confederates began to retire, he put his army in motion, and though it was now the depth of winter, he resolved to keep the field, in order to make the most of that favourable juncture for which he had waited so long. Some small towns in which the protestants had left garrisons, immediately opened their gates. Norlingen, Rotenberg, and Hall, Imperial cities, submitted soon after. Though Charles could not prevent the elector from levying, as he retreated, large contributions upon the archbishop of Mentz, the abbot of Fulda, and other ecclesiastics <sup>P</sup>, this was more than balanced by the submission of Ulm, one of the chief cities of Suabia, highly distinguished by its zeal for the Smalkaldic league. As soon as an example was set of deserting the common cause, the rest of the members became instantly impatient to follow it, and seemed afraid lest others, by getting the start of them in returning to their duty, should, on that account, obtain more favourable terms. The elector Palatine, a weak prince, who, notwithstanding his professions of *neutrality*, had, very preposterously, sent





stances of apostacy, expelled t  
out of their city, and accepted :  
the emperor was pleased to gran  
1547.] The duke of Wur  
among the first who had offer  
obliged to sue for pardon on hi  
after this mortifying humiliatio  
difficulty 9. Memmingen, and  
the circle of Suabia, being now  
their former associates, found it  
vide for their own safety, by  
selves on the emperor's mercy  
Frankfort on the Maine, citie  
the seat of danger, discovered  
ness than those which lay more  
a confederacy, lately so powerf  
Imperial throne, fell to pieces,  
in the snace of a few weeks : ha

and the cities by their deputies, were obliged to implore mercy in the humble posture of supplicants. As the emperor laboured with great difficulties from the want of money, imposed heavy fines upon them, which he exacted with most rapacious exactness. The duke of Wurtemberg paid three hundred thousand; the city of Augsburg an hundred fifty thousand; Ulm an hundred thousand; Nuremberg eighty thousand; Memmingen fifty thousand; and the rest in proportion to their wealth, or their different degrees of guilt. They were obliged, besides, to renounce the city of Smalkalde; to furnish assistance, if required, towards executing the Imperial ban against the elector and landgrave; to give up their artillery and warlike stores to the emperor; to convert their garrisons into their principal cities and fortifications; and, in this disarmed and defenceless situation, to expect the final award of the emperor should think proper to pronounce when the war came to an issue'. But, notwithstanding the great variety of articles dictated by him on this occasion, he, in conformity to his general plan, took care that nothing relating to religion should be inserted; and to such a degree he confederates humbled or overawed, that, notwithstanding the zeal which had so long animated them, they were solicitous only about their own safety, without venturing to insist on a point, the mention of which they saw the emperor avoid with so much industry. The inhabitants of

*d. 411, &c. Thuan. lib. iv. p. 125. Mem. de France, tom. i. 606.*

Memmingen alone made some feel procure a promise of protection in of their religion, but were checked by the Imperial ministers, that they from their demand.

The elector of Cologne, whom, r ing the sentence of excommunic against him by the pope, Charles I allowed to remain in possession of t copal see, being now required by to submit to the censures of the virtuous and disinterested prelate, expose his subjects to the miseries c own account, voluntarily resigned tl nity [Jan. 25]. With a moderatio his age and character, he chose to together with the exercise of his the retirement of a private life, ra disturb society by engaging in a violent struggle in order to retain h


During these transactions, the

earnest importunity to march immediately to his relief. But Charles, busy at that time in prescribing terms to such members of the league as were daily returning to their allegiance, thought it sufficient to detach Albert marquis of Brandenburg-Anspach with three thousand men to his assistance. Albert, though an enterprising and active officer, was unexpectedly surprised by the elector, who killed many of his troops, dispersed the remainder, and took him prisoner<sup>t</sup>. Maurice continued as much exposed as formerly; and if his enemy had known how to improve the opportunity which presented itself, his ruin must have been immediate and unavoidable. But the elector, no less slow and dilatory when invested with the sole command, than he had been formerly when joined in authority with a partner, never gave any proof of military activity but in this enterprise against Albert. Instead of marching directly towards Maurice, whom the defeat of his ally had greatly alarmed, he inconsiderately listened to overtures of accommodation, which his artful antagonist proposed with no other intention than to amuse him, and to slacken the vigour of his operations.

Such, indeed, was the posture of the emperor's affairs, that he could not march instantly to the relief of his ally. Soon after the separation of the confederate army, he, in order to ease himself of the burden of maintaining a superfluous number of troops, had dismissed the count of Buren with his Flemings<sup>u</sup>, imagining that the

<sup>t</sup> *Avila*, 99. 6. *Mem. de Ribier*, tom. i. 620.


<sup>u</sup> *Avila*, 83. 6. *Mem. de Ribier*, tom. i. 592.



ragacious venetians had endeavoured  
dissuade him. The rapid progress o  
perial arms, and the ease with which  
broken a combination that appeared n  
than powerful, opened his eyes at lei  
made him not only forget all the  
which he had expected from such a  
triumph over heresy, but placed, in th  
light, his own impolitic conduct, in h  
tributed towards acquiring for Charles I  
menſe increaſe of power, as would enable  
oppreſſing the liberties of Germany, t  
with abſolute authority to all the ſtate  
The moment that he perceived his err  
deavoured to correct it. Without  
emperor any warning of his intention,  
Farneſe, his grandſon, to return inſtant  
with all the troops under his comma

1 neither consulted the pope, nor had him any part of the conquests which he e, nor had allowed him any share in the tributions which he had raised. He had made any provision for the suppression, or the re-establishment of the catholic which were Paul's chief inducements to he treasures of the church so liberally in on the war. These colours, however spe- d not conceal from the emperor that secret which was the true motive of the pope's

But as Paul's orders with regard to ch of his troops were no less peremp- n unexpected, it was impossible to pre- ir retreat. Charles exclaimed loudly is treachery, in abandoning him so un- ly, while he was prosecuting a war un- in obedience to the papal injunctions, n which, if successful, so much honour ntage would redound to the church. To its he added threats and expostulations. d remained inflexible; his troops conti- ir march towards the ecclesiastical state; an elaborate memorial, intended as an for his conduct, he discovered new and nifest symptoms of alienation from the , together with a deep-rooted dread of er<sup>x</sup>. Charles, weakened by the with- of so great a body from his army, which ady much diminished by the number of ; that he had been obliged to throw into ns which had capitulated, found it ne- o recruit his forces by new levies, be-



have soon put him in a condition to  
field against the elector; but the  
violent eruption of a conspiracy as  
well as the great revolutions which  
extremely mysterious in its first  
seemed to portend, obliged him to  
tangling himself in new operations  
until he had fully discovered its four  
dency. The form of government  
been established in Genoa, at the  
Andrew Doria restored liberty to  
though calculated to obliterate the  
former dissensions, and received at fir  
approbation, did not, after a trial of  
years, give universal satisfaction to t  
lent and factious republicans. As  
administration of affairs was now lodg  
tain number of noble families, ma

it had been the labour and pride of his erect. But the authority and influence in his hands were innocent, they easily saw prove destructive, if usurped by any citizen's greater ambition, or less virtue. A citizen this dangerous character had actually such pretensions, and with some prospects.

Giannettino Doria, whom his grandfather Andrew destined to be the heir of his fortune, aimed likewise at being his successor. His temper, haughty, insolent, unbearing to such a degree as would hardly been tolerated in one born to reign, was never insupportable in the citizen of a free

The more sagacious among the Genoese feared and hated him as the enemy of liberties for which they were indebted to him. While Andrew himself, blinded by violent and undiscerning affection which in advanced age often contract for their members of their family, set no bounds to the indulgence with which he treated him; less solicitous to secure and perpetuate freedom of the commonwealth, than to aggrandise that undeserving kinsman.

Whatever suspicion of Doria's designs, or even dissatisfaction with the system of administration in the commonwealth, these circumstances might have occasioned, they would have

it is probable, in nothing more than rings and complaints, if John Lewis count of Lavagna, observing this growing had not been encouraged by it to attempt the boldest actions recorded in history. Young nobleman, the richest and most illustrious





of a generosity that anticipated his friends, and exceeded the strangers; of an insinuating address, and a flowing affability. The appearance of these virtues, formed him for enjoying and adorning. He concealed all the dispositions out for taking the lead in the darkest conspiracies; an insatiable ambition, a courage unacquainted with mind that disdained subordination could ill brook that station of in he was placed in the republic the power which the elder De he was filled with indignation its descending, like an hereditarian Giannettino. These various with violence on his turbulent mind, determined him to attain that domination to which he mit

ment. But having communicated his scheme to a few chosen confidants, from whom he kept nothing secret, Verrina, the chief of them, a man of desperate fortune, capable alike of advising and executing the most audacious deeds, remonstrated with earnestness against the folly of exposing himself to the most imminent danger, while he allowed another to reap all the fruits of his success; and exhorted him warmly to aim himself at that pre-eminence in his country, to which he was destined by his illustrious birth, was called by the voice of his fellow-citizens, and would be raised by the zeal of his friends. This discourse opened such great prospects to Fiesco, and so suitable to his genius, that abandoning his own plan, he eagerly adopted that of Verrina. The other persons present, though sensible of the hazardous nature of the undertaking, did not choose to condemn what their patron had so warmly approved. It was instantly resolved, in this dark cabal, to assassinate the two Dorias, as well as the principal persons of their party, to overturn the established system of government, and to place Fiesco on the ducal throne of Genoa. Time, however, and preparations were requisite to ripen such a design for execution; and while he was employed in carrying on these, Fiesco made it his chief care to guard against every thing that might betray his secret, or create suspicion. The disguise he assumed, was of all others the most impenetrable. He seemed to be abandoned entirely to pleasure and dissipation. A perpetual gaiety, diversified by the pursuit of all the amusements in which persons of his age and rank are apt to delight, engrossed, in at

the whole of his time and thought. In this hurry of dissipation, he prosecuted his plan with the most cool attention, neither suspending the design by a timid hesitation, nor precipitating the execution by an excess of impetuosity. He continued his correspondence with the French ambassador at Rome, though without communicating to him his real intention, that by his means he might secure the possession of the French arms, if hereafter he should find it necessary to call them in to his aid. He entered into a close confederacy with Farnese duke of Parma, who being disgusted with the emperor for refusing to grant him the investiture of that duchy, was eager to promote any measure that tended to diminish his influence in Italy, or to ruin a family so implicitly devoted to him as that of Doria. Being sensible that, in a maritime state, the acquisition of naval power was

generous and unsuspicious mind of Andrew, but deceived Giannetino, who, conscious of his own criminal intentions, was more apt to distrust the designs of others. So many instruments being now prepared, nothing remained but to strike the blow. Various consultations were held by Fiesco with his confidants, in order to settle the manner of doing it with the greatest certainty and effect. At first, they proposed to murder the Dorias and their chief adherents, during the celebration of high mass in the principal church; but, as Andrew was often absent from religious solemnities on account of his great age, that design was laid aside. It was then concerted that Fiesco should invite the uncle and nephew, with all their friends whom he had marked out as victims, to his house; where it would be easy to cut them off at once without danger or resistance; but as Giannetino was obliged to leave the town on the day which they had chosen, it became necessary likewise to alter this plan. They at last determined to attempt by open force, what they found difficult to effect by stratagem, and fixed on the night between the second and third of January, for the execution of their enterprize. The time was chosen with great propriety; for as the doge of the former year was to quit his office, according to custom, on the first of the month, and his successor could not be elected sooner than the fourth, the republic remained during that interval in a sort of anarchy, and Fiesco might with less violence take possession of the vacant dignity.

*The morning of that day Fiesco employed in visiting his friends, passing some hours among*



mained, without the least foresight  
that storm which had been so long  
and was now ready to burst over  
From their palace he hastened to be  
flood by itself in the middle of a la  
rounded by a high wall. The gate  
open in the morning, and all per  
distinction, were allowed to ente  
guards posted within the court suff  
return. Verrina, meanwhile, and  
trusted with the secret of the con  
conducting Fiesco's vassals, as we  
of his galleys, into the palace in sma  
as little noise as possible, disper  
through the city, and, in the m  
patron, invited to an entertainmen  
citizens whom they knew to be o  
the administration of the Dorias

While their minds were in this state of suspense and agitation, Fiesco appeared. With a look full of alacrity and confidence, he addressed himself to the persons of chief distinction, telling them, that they were not now called to partake of the pleasure of an entertainment, but to join, in a deed of valour, which would lead them to liberty and immortal renown. He set before their eyes the exorbitant as well as intolerable authority of the elder Doria, which the ambition of Giannettino, and the partiality of the emperor to a family more devoted to him than to their country, was about to enlarge and to render perpetual. This unrighteous dominion, continued he, you have it now in your power to subvert, and to establish the freedom of your country on a firm basis. The tyrants must be cut off. I have taken the most effectual measures for this purpose. My associates are numerous. I can depend on allies and protectors if necessary. Happily, the tyrants are as secure as I have been provident. Their insolent contempt of their countrymen has banished the suspicion and timidity which usually render the guilty quicksighted to discern, as well as sagacious to guard against the vengeance which they deserve. They will now feel the blow, before they suspect any hostile hand to be nigh. Let us then fall forth, that we may deliver our country by one generous effort, almost unaccompanied with danger, and certain of success. These words, uttered with that irresistible fervour which animates the mind when roused by great objects, made the desired impression on the audience. Fiesco's vassals, ready to execute whatever their master should com-



were struck at the proposal of  
less unexpected than atrocious ;  
imagined the other to be in the  
conspiracy, and saw himself surro  
who waited only a signal from th  
petrate the greatest crime.  
then all applauded, or feigned  
undertaking,

Fiesco having thus fixed an  
associates, before he gave them  
hastened for a moment to the  
wife, a lady of the noble house  
he loved with tender affection, :  
and virtue rendered her worthy  
noise of the armed men who c  
and palace, having long before  
ears, she concluded some hazard  
be in hand. and she trembled

is had unwarily seduced him, though it could not shake his resolution. "Farewell," he cried, he quitted the apartment, "you shall either never see me more, or you shall behold to-morrow every thing in Genoa subject to your power."

As soon as he rejoined his companions, he allotted each his proper station: some were appointed to assault and seize the different gates of the city; some to make themselves masters of the principal streets or places of strength: Fiesco reserved for himself the attack of the harbour where Doria's gallees were laid up, as the post of chief importance, and of greatest danger. It was now midnight, and the citizens slept in the security of peace, when this band of conspirators, numerous, desperate, and well armed, rushed to execute their plan. They surprised some of the gates, without meeting with any resistance. They got possession of others after a sharp contest with the soldiers on guard. Verrina, with a galley which had been fitted out against the Turks, blocked up the mouth of the Darfena little harbour where Doria's fleet lay. All possibility of escape being cut off by this precaution, when Fiesco attempted to enter the gallees from the shore, to which they were made fast, they were in no condition to make resistance, as they were not only unrigged and disarmed, but had no crew on board, except the slaves chained to the oar. Every quarter of the city was now filled with noise and tumult, all the streets resounded with the cry of Fiesco and liberty. At that name, so popular and beloved, every man of the lower rank took arms and joined,





that it was occasioned by some mutiny of the sailors, rushed out with a few others and hurried towards the harbour. The Duke of St. Thomas, through which he had to pass, was already in the possession of the command, who, the moment he appeared, fell upon him with the utmost fury, and murdered him on the spot. The same must have been the fate of the elder Doria, if Jerome de Fiesco had followed his brother's plan, and had proceeded directly to attack him in his palace; but the sordid consideration of preventing the plundered amidst the confusion, having prevailed upon his followers to advance, Andrew got information of his nephew's death, as well as of his own danger; and mounting on horseback, saved himself by flight. Amidst this general confusion, the few senators had the courage to offer

be satisfied, or rather to submit to whatever terms he should please to prescribe.

But by this time Fiesco, with whom they were empowered to negotiate, was no more. Just as he was about to leave the harbour, where every thing had succeeded to his wish, that he might join his victorious companions, he heard some extraordinary uproar on board the admiral galley. Alarmed at the noise, and fearing that the slaves might break their chains, and overpower his associates, he ran thither; but the plank which reached from the shore to the vessel happening to overturn, he fell into the sea, whilst he hurried forward too precipitately. Being loaded with heavy armour, he sunk to the bottom, and perished in the very moment when he must have taken full possession of every thing that his ambitious heart could desire. Verrina was the first who discovered this fatal accident, and foreseeing, at once, all its consequences, concealed it with the utmost industry from every one but a few leaders of the conspiracy. Nor was it difficult, amidst the darkness and confusion of the night, to have kept it secret, until a treaty with the senators should have put the city in the power of the conspirators. All their hopes of this were disconcerted by the imprudence of Jerome Fiesco, who, when the deputies of the senate inquired for his brother, the count of Lavagna, that they might make their proposal to him, replied with a childish vanity, "I am now the only person to whom that title belongs, and with me you must treat." These words discovered as well to his friends as to his enemies  
wh

what had happened, and made the  
which might have been expected upon  
deputies, encouraged by this event, and  
which could occasion such a sudden re-  
might turn to their advantage, assumed  
with admirable presence of mind, a  
suitable to the change in their circum-  
made high demands. While they  
to gain time by protracting the nego-  
rest of the senators were busy in asser-  
partisans, and in forming a body con-  
fending the palace of the republic. On  
hand, the conspirators, astonished at  
of a man whom they adored and  
placing no confidence in Jerome, a  
felt their courage die away, and th-  
from their hands. That profound  
secrecy with which the conspiracy had  
certed, and which had contributed  
much to its success, proved now the  
of its miscarriage. The leader was  
greater part of those who acted unde-  
not his confidants, and were stran-  
ger to the object at which he aimed. There  
among them whose authority or al-  
him to assume Fiesco's place, or to  
after having lost the spirit which  
and activity deserted the whole body.  
The conspirators withdrew to their  
that amidst the darkness of the  
passed unobserved, and might re-  
Others sought for safety by a tim-  
before break of day, most of  
precipitation from a city, w

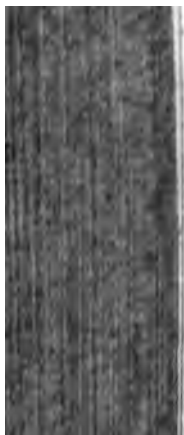
before, was ready to acknowledge them  
sters.

Next morning every thing was quiet in  
a; not an enemy was to be seen; few  
of the violence of the former night ap-  
d, the conspirators having conducted their  
prize with more noise than bloodshed, and  
d all their advantages by surprise, rather  
by force of arms. Towards evening, An-  
Doria returned to the city, being met by  
e inhabitants, who received him with accla-  
ns of joy. Though the disgrace as well as  
r of the preceding night were fresh in his  
and the mangled body of his kinsman still  
his eyes, such was his moderation as well  
gnanimity, that the decree issued by the  
against the conspirators, did not exceed  
st measure of severity which was requisite  
e support of government, and was dictated  
r by the violence of resentment, nor the  
r of revenge.\*

After taking the necessary precautions for pre-  
g the flame, which was now so happily ex-  
hed, from breaking out anew, the first  
the senate was to send an ambassador to

uan. 93. Sigonii Vita Andræ Doræ, 1196. La-  
tion du Compte de Fiesque, par Cardin. de Retz.  
Istoria, lib. vi. 369. Foletæ Conjuratio Jo. Lud.  
ip. Græv. Thes. Ital. i. 883.

is remarkable, that cardinal de Retz, at the age of  
s, composed a history of this conspiracy, containing  
discovery of his admiration of Fiesco and his enter-  
s render it not surprising that a minister, so jealous  
erning as Richlieu, should be led, by the perusal of  
*dict* the turbulent and dangerous spirit of that young  
c. *Mém. de Retz*, tom. i. p. 13.



pected. He could not believe a bold or adventurous foe, durl such an enterprize, but on for and from the hope of foreign formed that the duke of Par acquainted with the plan of the immediately supposed that the p ignorant of a measure, which his nanced. Proceeding from this jecture, which Paul's cautious i in other instances rendered ext he concluded, that the French known and approved of the defi gan to apprehend that this spa kindle the flame of war which h in Italy. As he had drained tories of troops on account of he was altogether unprovided :

## B O O K IX.

THE emperor's dread of the hostile intentions of the pope and French king did not proceed from any imaginary or ill-grounded suspicion. Paul had already given the strongest proofs both of his jealousy and enmity. Charles could not hope, that Francis, after a rivalry of so long continuance, would behold the great advantages which he had gained over the confederate protestants, without feeling his ancient emulation revive. He was not deceived in this conjecture. Francis had observed the rapid progress of his arms with deep concern, and though hitherto prevented, by circumstances which have been mentioned, from interposing in order to check them, he was now convinced that, if he did not make some extraordinary and timely effort, Charles must acquire such a degree of power as would enable him to give law to the rest of Europe. This apprehension, which did not take its rise from the jealousy of rivalry alone, but was entertained by the wisest politicians of the age, suggested various expedients which might serve to retard the course of the emperor's victories, and to form by degrees such a combination against him as might put a stop to his dangerous career.

With this view, Francis instructed his emissaries in Germany to employ all their address in order to revive the courage of the confederates, and to prevent them from submitting to the emperor. *He made liberal offers of his assistance to*

the elector and landgrave, whom he knew to be the most zealous as well as the most powerful of the whole body; he used every argument and proposed every advantage which could either confirm their dread of the emperor's designs, or determine them not to imitate the inconsiderate credulity of their associates, in giving up their religion and liberties to his disposal. While he took this step towards continuing the civil war which raged in Germany, he endeavoured likewise to stir up foreign enemies against the emperor. He solicited Solymán to seize this favourable opportunity of invading Hungary, which had been drained of all the troops necessary for its defence, in order to form the army against the confederates of Smalkalde. He exhorted the pope to repair, by a vigorous and seasonal effort, the error of which he had been guilty in contributing to raise the emperor to such a formidable height of power. Finding Paul, however, from the consciousness of his own mistake, his dread of its consequences, abundantly disposed to listen to what he suggested, he availed himself of this favourable disposition which the pope began to discover, as an argument to gain the Venetians. He endeavoured to convince them that nothing could save Italy, and even Europe from oppression and servitude, but their joining with the pope and him, in giving the finishing to a general confederacy, in order to oppose that ambitious potentate, whom they all equal reason to dread.

Having set on foot these negotiations in the southern courts, he turned his attention towards those in the north of Europe

; of Denmark had particular reasons to be  
ided with the emperor, Francis imagined  
the object of the league which he had pro-  
d would be highly acceptable to him: and  
considerations of caution or prudence should  
ain him from joining in it, he attempted to  
come these, by offering him the young queen  
cots in marriage to his son<sup>a</sup>. As the mi-  
rs who governed England in the name of  
ard VI. had openly declared themselves con-  
to the opinions of the reformers, as soon as  
came safe upon Henry's death to lay aside  
disguise which his intolerant bigotry had  
ed them to assume, Francis flattered himself  
their zeal would not allow them to remain  
ive spectators of the overthrow and destruc-  
of those who professed the same faith with  
selves. He hoped, that notwithstanding  
truggles of faction incident to a minority,  
the prospect of an approaching rupture with  
scots, he might prevail on them likewise to  
part in the common cause<sup>b</sup>.

While Francis employed such a variety of ex-  
ents, and exerted himself with such extraor-  
y activity, to rouse the different states of  
pe against his rival, he did not neglect what  
aded on himself alone. He levied troops in  
rts of his dominions; he collected military  
; he contracted with the Swiss cantons for  
siderable body of men; he put his finances  
mirable order; he remitted considerable  
to the elector and landgrave; and took all

<sup>a</sup> *Mem. de Ribier*, i. 600. 606.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid.* 635.



other steps necessary towards commencing hostilities, on the shortest warning, and with the greatest vigour.  
 Operations so complicated, and which required the putting so many instruments in motion, did not escape the emperor's observation. He was fully informed of Francis's intrigues in the several courts of Europe, as well as of his domestic preparations; and sensible how fatal an intervention a foreign war would prove to his designs on Germany, he trembled at the prospect of that event. The danger, however, appeared to him as unavoidable as it was great. He knew the insatiable and well-directed ambition of Solyman, and that he always chose the season for beginning his military enterprizes with prudence equal to the valour with which he conducted them. The pope, who he had good reason to believe, wanted not pretexts to justify a rupture, nor inclination to begin hostilities. He had already made some discovery of his sentiments, by expressing a joy altogether unbecoming the head of the church, on receiving an account of the advantage which the elector of Saxony had gained over Albrecht of Brandenburg; and as he was now securing himself, in the French king, an ally of sufficient power to support him, he was at no pains to conceal the violence and extent of his preparations. The Venetians, Charles was well assured, observed the growth of his power with jealousy, which, added to the solicitations and assistance of France, might at last quicken their counsels, and overcome their natural

The Danes and English, it was evident, had both peculiar reason to be disgusted, as well as strong motives to act against him. But above all, he dreaded the active emulation of Francis himself, whom he considered as the soul and mover of any confederacy that could be formed against him; and as that monarch had afforded protection to Verrina, who sailed directly to Marseilles upon the miscarriage of Fiesco's conspiracy, Charles expected every moment to see the commencement of those hostile operations in Italy, of which he conceived the insurrection in Genoa to have been only the prelude.

But while he remained in this state of suspense and solicitude, there was one circumstance which afforded him some prospect of escaping the danger. The French king's health began to decline. A disease, which was the effect of his inconsiderate pursuit of pleasure, preyed gradually on his constitution. The preparations for war, as well as the negotiations in the different courts, began to languish, together with the monarch who gave spirit to both. The Genoese, during that interval [March], reduced Montobbio, took Jerome Fiesco prisoner, and putting him to death, together with his chief adherents, extinguished all remains of the conspiracy. Several of the Imperial cities in Germany, despairing of timely assistance from France, submitted to the emperor. Even the landgrave seemed disposed to abandon the elector, and to bring matters to a speedy accommodation, on such terms as he could obtain. In the mean time, Charles waited *with impatience* the issue of a distemper, which *was to decide* whether he must relinquish



The good fortune, so remarkable to his family, that some historians call the *Star of the House of Austria*, shined on him on this occasion. Francis died at Bouillet, on the last day of March, the third year of his age, and the thirty-third year of his reign. During twenty-eight years an avowed rivalry subsisted between the emperor, which involved not only dominions, but the greater part of Europe in wars, which were prosecuted with animosity, and drawn out to a greater length than had been known in any former age. Many circumstances contributed to heighten animosity, founded in opposition, heightened by personal emulation, aggravated not only by mutual injuries, but by reciprocal insults. At the same time, the advantage one seemed to possess towards the ascendant, was wonderfully balanced.

different as the advantages which they possessed, and contributed no less to prolong the contest between them. Francis took his resolutions suddenly, prosecuted them at first with warmth, and pushed them into execution with a most adventurous courage; but being destitute of the perseverance necessary to surmount difficulties, he often abandoned his designs, or relaxed the vigour of pursuit, from impatience, and sometimes from levity. Charles deliberated long, and determined with coolness; but having once fixed his plan, he adhered to it with inflexible obstinacy, and neither danger nor discouragement could turn him aside from the execution of it. The success of their enterprises was suitable to the diversity of their characters, and was uniformly influenced by it. Francis, by his impetuous activity, often disconcerted the emperor's well-laid schemes; Charles, by a more calm but steady prosecution of his designs, checked the rapidity of his rival's career, and baffled or repulsed his most vigorous efforts. The former, at the opening of a war or of a campaign, broke in upon his enemy with the violence of a torrent, and carried all before him; the latter, waiting until he saw the force of his rival begin to abate, recovered in the end not only all that he had lost, but made new acquisitions. Few of the French monarch's attempts towards conquest, whatever promising aspect they might wear at first, were conducted to an happy issue; many of the emperor's enterprises, even after they appeared desperate and impracticable, terminated in the most prosperous manner. Francis was dazzled with the splendour of an undertaking

Char

Charles was allured by the prospect to his advantage.

The degree, however, of merit and reputation has not by a strict scrutiny into their merit, or by an impartial comparison of their greatness and success of their reign. Francis is one of those monarchs who has a higher rank in the temple of fame by his talents or performances than by his circumstances. The superiority he acquired by the victory of Pavie in that period, he preserved throughout his reign, was so manifest, that against his exorbitant and growing power, viewed by most of the other powers, the partiality which naturally arises, gallantly maintain an unequal balance in the favour due to one who was their common enemy, and endeavouring

as the most accomplished and amiable gentleman in his dominions, they hardly murmured at acts of male-administration, which, in a prince of less engaging dispositions, would have been deemed unpardonable. This admiration, however, must have been temporary only, and would have died away, with the courtiers who bestowed it ; the illusion arising from his private virtues must have ceased, and posterity would have judged of his public conduct with its usual impartiality ; but another circumstance prevented this, and his name hath been transmitted to posterity with increasing reputation. Science and the arts had, at that time, made little progress in France. They were just beginning to advance beyond the limits of Italy, where they had revived, and which had hitherto been their only seat. Francis took them immediately under his protection, and vied with Leo himself, in the zeal and munificence with which he encouraged them. He invited learned men to his court, he conversed with them familiarly, he employed them in business, he raised them to offices of dignity, and honoured them with his confidence. That order of men, not more prone to complain when denied the respect to which they conceive themselves entitled, than apt to be pleased when treated with the distinction which they consider as their due, thought they could not exceed in gratitude to such a benefactor, and strained their invention, and employed all their ingenuity in panegyric. Succeeding authors, warmed with their descriptions of Francis's bounty, adopted their encomiums, and even added to them. The appellation of Father of Letters bestowed upon Francis, hath rendered

me

memory sacred among historians; and they seem to have regarded it as a sort of impiety to uncover his infirmities, or to point out his defects. Thus Francis, notwithstanding his inferior abilities, and want of success, hath more than equalled the fame of Charles. The good qualities which he possessed as a man, have entitled him to greater admiration and praise than have been bestowed upon the extensive genius and fortunate arts of a more capable, but less amiable rival.

By his death a considerable change was made in the state of Europe. Charles, grown old in the arts of government and command, had now to contend only with younger monarchs, who could not be regarded as worthy to enter the lists with him, who had stood so many encounters with Henry VIII. and Francis I. and come off with honour in all those different struggles. By this event, he was eased of all disquietude, and was happy to find that he might begin with safety those operations against the elector of Saxony, which he had hitherto been obliged to suspend. He knew the abilities of Henry II. who had just mounted the throne of France, to be greatly inferior to those of his father, and forelaw that he would be so much occupied for some time in displacing the late king's ministers, whom he hated, and in gratifying the ambitious demands of his own favourites, that he had nothing to dread, either from his personal efforts, or from any confederacy which this unexperienced prince could form.

But as it was uncertain how long such an interval of security might continue, Charles determined instantly to improve it: and as soon as

1547.]

EMPEROR CHARLES V.

2

he heard of Francis's demise, he began his march [April 13] from Egra on the borders of Bohemia. But the departure of the papal troops together with the retreat of the Flemings, had so much diminished his army, that sixteen thousand men were all he could assemble. With this inconsiderable body he set out on an expedition the event of which was to decide what degree of authority he should possess from that period in Germany: but as this little army consisted chiefly of the veteran Spanish and Italian bands he did not, in trusting to them, commit himself to the decision of chance; and even with so small a force he had reason to entertain the most sanguine hopes of success. The elector had levied an army greatly superior in number; but neither the experience and discipline of his troops, nor the abilities of his officers, were to be compared with those of the emperor. The elector, besides, had already been guilty of a great error, which deprived him of all the advantage which he might have derived from his superior numbers, and was alone sufficient to have occasioned his ruin. Instead of keeping his forces united, he detached one great body towards the frontiers of Bohemia, in order to facilitate his march with the melancholy news of that king's





out losing a moment. The elector, his head-quarters at Meissen, conceived a state of fluctuation and uncertainty, even became more undetermined, as the danger drew near, and called for more prompt and decisive resolutions. Sometimes if he had resolved to defend the Elbe, and to hazard a battle with as soon as the detachments which he was able to join him. At other times he abandoned this as rash and perilous, and adopted the more prudent counsels which advised him to endeavour at protracting the war, and for that end to retire under the walls of Wittemberg, where the Imperialists might attack him without manifest disadvantage, where he might wait, in safety, for the relief which he expected from Mecklenburg.

attempt to pass at that place, and advanced a few miles with his main body, encamped there in expectation of the event, according to which he proposed to regulate his subsequent motions.

Charles, meanwhile, pushing forward incessantly, arrived the evening of the twenty-third of May on the banks of the Elbe, opposite to the city of Magdeburg. The river, at that place, was three hundred paces in breadth, above four feet in depth, its current rapid, and the bank possessed by the Saxons was higher than that which he occupied. Undismayed, however, by all these circumstances, he called together his general officers, and without asking their opinions, communicated to them his intention of attempting next morning to force his passage over the river, and to attack the enemy wherever he could come up with them.

They all expressed their astonishment at his bold resolution; and even the duke of Brunswick, though naturally daring and impetuous, Maurice of Saxony, notwithstanding his impulse to crush his rival the elector, remonstrated earnestly against it. But the emperor, relying on his own judgment or good fortune, paid no regard to their arguments, and gave the orders necessary for executing his design.

Early in the morning a body of Spanish and German foot marched towards the river, and began to pour an incessant fire upon the enemy. The long muskets used in that age, did execution at a great distance on the opposite bank, and many of the soldiers, fired on by a martial ardour in order to get at the enemy, rushed into the stream, and, being breast-high, fired with a more certain aim.

aim, and with greater effect. Under cover of their fire, a bridge of boats was begun to be laid for the infantry; and a peasant having undertaken to conduct the cavalry through the river by a ford with which he was well acquainted, they also were put in motion. The Saxons posted in Muhlberg endeavoured to obstruct these operations, by a brisk fire from a battery which they had erected; but as a thick fog covered all the low grounds upon the river, they could not take aim with any certainty, and the Imperialists suffered very little; at the same time the Saxons being much galled by the Spaniards and Italians, they set on fire some boats which had been collected near the village, and prepared to retire. The Imperialists perceiving this, ten Spanish soldiers instantly stripped themselves, and holding their swords with their teeth, swam across the river, put to flight such of the Saxons as ventured to oppose them, saved from the flames as many boats as were sufficient to complete their own bridge, and by this spirited and successful action, encouraged their companions no less than they intimidated the enemy.

By this time the cavalry, each trooper having a foot soldier behind him, began to enter the river, the light horse marching in the front, followed by the men at arms, whom the emperor led in person, mounted on a Spanish horse, dressed in a sumptuous habit, and carrying a javelin in his hand. Such a numerous body struggling through a great river, in which, according to the directions of their guide, they were obliged to make several turns, sometimes treading on a firm bottom, sometimes swimming, presented to

companions, whom they left behind, a spec-  
tacularly magnificent and interesting<sup>d</sup>. Their  
courage, at last, surmounted every obstacle, no  
showing any symptom of fear, when the  
elector shared in the danger no less than the  
common soldier. The moment that they reached  
the opposite side, Charles, without waiting the  
order of the rest of the infantry, advanced to-  
wards the Saxons with the troops which had  
been along with him, who, flushed with their  
good fortune, and despising an enemy who had  
been ordered to oppose them, when it might have  
been done with such advantage, made no account  
of their superior numbers, and marched on as to  
win victory.

During all these operations, which necessarily  
consumed much time, the elector remained in-  
motion in his camp; and from an infatuation  
which appears to be so amazing, that the best  
modern historians impute it to the treacherous  
conduct of his generals, who deceived him by false  
intelligence, he would not believe that the emper-  
or had passed the river, or could be so near at

Hand. Being convinced, at last, of his fatal  
error, by the concurring testimony of eye-  
witnesses, he gave orders for retreating towards  
Münsterberg. But a German army, encumbered,  
laden with baggage and artillery, could not  
move suddenly in motion. They had just be-  
gan to march when the light troops of the  
elector came in view, and the elector saw an en-  
counter to be unavoidable. As he was no less

<sup>d</sup>, 115, 2.

<sup>e</sup> Camerac. ap. Freher. iii. 493.  
*Op. Hist. Germ.* 1047. 1049.

bold in action than irresolute in council, he made the disposition for battle with the greatest presence of mind, and in the most proper manner, taking advantage of a great forest to cover his wings, so as to prevent his being surrounded by the enemy's cavalry, which were far more numerous than his own. The emperor, likewise, ranged his men in order as they came up, and riding along the ranks, exhorted them with few but efficacious words to do their duty. It was with a very different spirit that the two armies advanced to the charge. As the day, which had hitherto been dark and cloudy, happened to clear up at that moment, this accidental circumstance made an impression on the different parties corresponding to the tone of their minds; the Saxons, surprised and disheartened, felt pain at being exposed fully to the view of the enemy; the Imperialists, being now secure that the protestant forces could not escape from them, rejoiced at the return of sun-shine, as a certain presage of victory. The shock of battle would not have been long doubtful, if the personal courage which the elector displayed, together with the activity which he exerted from the moment that the approach of the enemy rendered an engagement certain, and cut off all possibility of hesitation, had not revived in some degree the spirit of his troops. They repulsed the Hungarian light-horse who began the attack, and received with firmness the men at arms who next advanced to the charge; but as these were the flower of the Imperial army, were commanded by experienced officers, and fought under the emperor's eye, the Saxons soon began to give way.

1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses of the members of the committee.

2. The second part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

3. The third part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

4. The fourth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

5. The fifth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

6. The sixth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

7. The seventh part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

8. The eighth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

9. The ninth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

10. The tenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

11. The eleventh part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

12. The twelfth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

13. The thirteenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

14. The fourteenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

15. The fifteenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

16. The sixteenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

17. The seventeenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

18. The eighteenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

19. The nineteenth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.

20. The twentieth part is a list of the names and addresses of the members of the committee.



and the light troops rallying at the same time and falling on their flanks, the flight became general. A small body of chosen soldiers, among whom the elector had fought in person, still continued to defend themselves, and endeavoured to save their master by retiring into the forest ; but being surrounded on every side, the elector wounded in the face, exhausted with fatigue, and perceiving all resistance to be vain, surrendered himself a prisoner. He was conducted immediately towards the emperor, whom he found just returned from the pursuit, standing on the field of battle in the full exultation of success, and receiving the congratulations of his officers, upon this complete victory obtained by his valour and conduct. Even in such an unfortunate and humbling situation, the elector's behaviour was equally magnanimous and decent. Sensible of his condition, he approached his conqueror without any of the sullenness or pride which would have been improper in a captive ; and conscious of his own dignity, he descended to no mean submission, unbecoming the high station which he held among the German princes. " The fortune of war," said he, " has made me your prisoner, most gracious Emperor, and I hope to be treated" — Here, Charles hastily interrupted him : " And am I then, at last, acknowledged to be emperor ? Charles of Ghent was the only title you lately allowed me. You shall be treated as you deserve." At these words he turned from him abruptly with an haughty air. To this cruel repulse, the king of the Romans added reproaches in his own name, using expressions still more ungenerous and insulting. The elector



made no reply; but, with an unaltered countenance, which discovered neither astonishment nor dejection, accompanied the Spanish foldiers appointed to guard him<sup>f</sup>.

This decisive victory cost the Imperialists only fifty men. Twelve hundred of the Saxons were killed, chiefly in the pursuit, and a greater number taken prisoners. About four hundred kept in a body, and escaped to Wittemberg, together with the electoral prince, who had likewise been wounded in the action. After resting two days in the field of battle, partly to refresh his army, and partly to receive the deputies of the adjacent towns, which were impatient to secure his protection by submitting to his will, the emperor began to move towards Wittemberg, that he might terminate the war at once, by the reduction of that city. The unfortunate elector was carried along in a sort of triumph, and exposed every where, as a captive, to his own subjects; a spectacle extremely afflicting to them, who both honoured and loved him; though the insult was so far from subduing his firm spirit, that it did not even ruffle the wonted tranquillity and composure of his mind.

As Wittemberg, the residence, in that age, of the electoral branch of the Saxon family, was one of the strongest cities in Germany, and could not be taken, if properly defended, without great difficulty, the emperor marched thither with the utmost dispatch, hoping that while the consternation

<sup>f</sup> Sleid. Hist. 426. Thuan. 136. Hortensius de Bello German. ap. Scard. vol. ii. 498. Descript. Pugnae Mulberg. ibid. p. 509. P. Heuter. Rer. Austr. lib. xii. c. 13.

occasioned by his victory was still recent, the inhabitants might imitate the example of their countrymen, and submit to his power, as soon as he appeared before their walls. But Sybilla of Cleves, the elector's wife, a woman no less distinguished by her abilities than her virtue, instead of abandoning herself to tears and lamentations upon her husband's misfortune, endeavoured by her example as well as exhortations, to animate the citizens. She inspired them with such resolution, that, when summoned to surrender, they returned a vigorous answer, warning the emperor to behave towards their sovereign with the respect due to his rank, as they were determined to treat Albert of Brandenburg, who was still a prisoner, precisely in the same manner that he treated the elector. The spirit of the inhabitants, no less than the strength of the city, seemed now to render a siege in form necessary. After such a signal victory, it would have been disgraceful not to have undertaken it, though at the same time the emperor was destitute of every thing requisite for carrying it on. But Maurice removed all difficulties by engaging to furnish provisions, artillery, ammunition, pioneers, and whatever else should be needed. Trusting to this, Charles gave orders to open the trenches before the town. It quickly appeared, that Maurice's eagerness to reduce the capital of those dominions, which he expected as his reward for taking arms against his kinsman, and deserting the protestant cause, had led him to promise what exceeded his power to perform. A battering train was, indeed, carried safely down the Elbe from Dresden to Wittemberg; but as Maurice had not sufficient



of the Imperialists. This put a progress of the siege, and convinced that as he could not rely on Maurice, recourse ought to be had to so serious as well as more certain means for the possession of the town.

The unfortunate elector was and Charles was ungenerous and unkind enough to take advantage of this weakness to make an experiment whether he could prevail about his design, by working upon the passions of a wife for her husband, or upon the affections of children towards their parent. He summoned Sybilla a second time, letting her know that if she refused to comply, the elector should advance his head for her obstinacy. To comply with this was not an empty threat. I

[lay 10]. This strange tribunal founded its charge on the ban of the empire which had been laid against the prisoner by the sole authority of the emperor, and was destitute of every legal formality which could render it valid. But the art-martial, presuming the elector to be thereby manifestly convicted of treason and rebellion, condemned him to suffer death by being beheaded. This decree was intimated to the elector while he was amusing himself in playing chess with Ernest of Brunswick his fellow-prisoner. He paused for a moment, without discovering any symptom either of surprise or terror; and after taking notice of the regularity as well as injustice of the emperor's proceedings: "It is easy, continued he, to comprehend his scheme. I must die, because Wittemberg will not surrender; and I shall lay down my life with pleasure, if, by that sacrifice, I can preserve the dignity of my house, and transmit my posterity the inheritance which belongs to me. Would to God, that this sentence may not affect my wife and children more than it intimidates me! and that they, for the sake of living a few days to a life already too long, may not renounce honours and territories which they are born to possess!" He then turned to his antagonist, whom he challenged to continue the game. He played with his usual attention and ingenuity, and having beat Ernest, expressed the satisfaction which is commonly felt on winning such victories. After this, he withdrew to his own apartment, that he might employ the



0  
2  
t  
1  
1  
-

supported with such undaunted  
husband's misfortunes, while  
they could reach no farther than  
power or territories, felt all his  
soon as his life was threatened.  
that, she despised every other  
was willing to make any sacrifice  
appease an incensed conqueror  
time, the duke of Cleves, the  
burg, and Maurice, to none  
had communicated the true  
proceedings against the elector  
ly with him to spare his life  
prompted to do so merely by  
sister, and regard for his brother  
two others dreaded the universe  
they would incur, if, after  
often of the ample  
had ...

While they, from such various motives, solicited Charles, with the most earnest importunity, not to execute the sentence; Sybilla, and his children, conjured the elector, by letters as well as messengers, to scruple at no concession that would extricate him out of the present danger, and deliver them from their fears and anguish on his account. The emperor, perceiving that the expedient which he had tried began to produce the effect that he intended, fell by degrees from his former rigour, and allowed himself to soften to promises of clemency and forgiveness, if the elector would shew himself worthy of his favour, by submitting to reasonable terms. The elector, whom the consideration of what he might offer himself had made no impression, was melted by the tears of a wife whom he loved, and could not resist the intreaties of his family. In compliance with their repeated solicitations, he agreed to articles of accommodation [May 19], which he would otherwise have rejected with disdain. The chief of them were, that he should resign the electoral dignity, as well for himself as for his posterity, into the emperor's hands, to be disposed of entirely at his pleasure; that he should instantly put the Imperial troops in possession of the cities of Wittemberg and Gotha; that he should set Albert of Brandenburg at liberty without ransom; that he should submit to the decrees of the Imperial chamber, and quiesce in whatever reformation the emperor could make in the constitution of that court; that he should renounce all leagues against the emperor or king of the Romans, and enter into alliance for the future, in which they were

not comprehended. In return for these important concessions, the emperor not only promised to spare his life, but to settle on him and his posterity the city of Gotha and its territories, together with an annual pension of fifty thousand florins, payable out of the revenues of the electorate; and likewise to grant him a sum in ready money to be applied towards the discharge of his debts. Even these articles of grace were clogged with the mortifying condition of his remaining the emperor's prisoner during the rest of his life<sup>1</sup>. To the whole, Charles had subjoined, that he should submit to the decrees of the pope and council with regard to the controverted points in religion; but the elector, though he had been persuaded to sacrifice all the objects which men commonly hold to be the dearest and most valuable, was inflexible with regard to this point; and neither threats nor intreaties could prevail to make him renounce what he deemed to be truth, or persuade him to act in opposition to the dictates of his conscience.

As soon as the Saxon garrison marched out of Wittemberg, the emperor fulfilled his engagements to Maurice; and in reward for his merit in having deserted the protestant cause, and having contributed with such success towards the dissolution of the Smalkaldic league, he gave him possession of that city, together with all the other towns in the electorate. It was not without reluctance, however, that he made such a sacrifice; the extraordinary success of his arms

<sup>1</sup> Sleid. 427. Thuan. i. 142. Du Mont Corps Di-  
plom. iv. p. 11. 332.

had begun to operate in its usual manner, upon his ambitious mind, suggesting new and vast projects for the aggrandizement of his family, towards the accomplishment of which the retaining of Saxony would have been of the utmost consequence. But as this scheme was not then ripe for execution, he durst not yet venture to disclose it; nor would it have been either safe or prudent to offend Maurice at that juncture, by such a manifest violation of all the promises, which had seduced him to abandon his natural allies.

The landgrave, Maurice's father-in-law, was still in arms; and though now left alone to maintain the protestant cause, was neither a feeble nor contemptible enemy. His dominions were of considerable extent; his subjects animated with zeal for the reformation; and if he could have held the Imperialists at bay for a short time, he had much to hope from a party whose strength was still unbroken, whose union as well as vigour might return, and which had reason to depend, with certainty, on being effectually supported by the king of France. The landgrave thought not of anything so bold or adventurous; but being seized with the same consternation which had taken possession of his associates, he was intent only on the means of procuring favourable terms from the emperor, whom he viewed as a conqueror, to whose will there was a necessity of submitting. Maurice encouraged this tame and pacific spirit, by magnifying, on the one hand, the emperor's power; by boasting, on the other, of his own interest with his victorious ally; and by representing the advantageous conditions which



could not fail of obtaining by his intercession for a friend, whom he was so solicitous to save. Sometimes the landgrave was induced to place such unbounded confidence in his promises, that he was impatient to bring matters to a final accommodation. On other occasions, the emperor's exorbitant ambition, restrained neither by the scruples of decency, nor the maxims of justice, together with the recent and shocking proof which he had given of this in his treatment of the elector of Saxony, came so full into his thoughts, and made such a lively impression on them, that he broke off abruptly the negotiations which he had begun; seeming to be convinced that it was more prudent to depend for safety on his own arms, than to confide in Charles's generosity. But this bold resolution, which despair had suggested to an impatient spirit, fretted by disappointments, was not of long continuance. Upon a more deliberate survey of the enemy's power, as well as his own weakness, his doubts and fears returned upon him, and together with them the spirit of negotiating, and the desire of accommodation.

Maurice and the elector of Brandenburg acted as mediators between him and the emperor; and after all that the former had vaunted of his influence, the conditions prescribed to the landgrave were extremely rigorous. The articles with regard to his renouncing the league of Smalkalde, acknowledging the emperor's authority, and submitting to the decrees of the Imperial chamber, were the same which had been imposed on the elector of Saxony. Besides these, he was required to surrender his person

territories to the emperor; to implore for on on his knees; to pay an hundred and thousand crowns towards defraying the ex-  
 ces of the war; to demolish the fortifications  
 ll the towns in his dominions except one;  
 blige the garrison which he placed in it to  
 an oath of fidelity to the emperor; to allow  
 e passage through his territories to the Im-  
 al troops as often as it shall be demanded;  
 eliver up all his artillery and ammunition to  
 emperor; to set at liberty, without ransom,  
 ry of Brunswick, together with the other  
 oners whom he had taken during the war;  
 neither to take arms himself, nor to permit  
 of his subjects to serve against the emperor  
 is allies for the future<sup>k</sup>.

The landgrave ratified these articles, though  
 the utmost reluctance, as they contained no  
 relation with regard to the manner in which  
 as to be treated, and left him entirely at the  
 eror's mercy. Necessity, however, compelled  
 to give his assent to them. Charles, who  
 assumed the haughty and imperious tone of a  
 queror, ever since the reduction of Saxony,  
 ed on unconditional submission, and would  
 ut nothing to be added to the terms which  
 ad prescribed, that could in any degree limit  
 ulness of his power, or restrain him from be-  
 g as he saw meet towards a prince whom he  
 rded as absolutely at his disposal. But  
 gh he would not vouchsafe to negotiate  
 the landgrave on such a footing of equality,  
 suffer any article to be inserted among those

<sup>k</sup> Sleid. 430. Thuan. l. iv. 146.

which he had dictated to him, that could be considered as a formal stipulation for the security and freedom of his person; he, or his ministers in his name, gave the elector of Brandenburg and Maurice such full satisfaction with regard to this point, that they assured the landgrave, that Charles would behave to him in the same way as he had done to the duke of Wurtemberg, and would allow him, whenever he had made his submission, to return to his own territories. Upon finding the landgrave to be still possessed with his former suspicions of the emperor's intentions, and unwilling to trust verbal or ambiguous declarations, in a matter of such essential concern as his own liberty, they sent him a bond signed by them both, containing the most solemn obligations, that if any violence whatsoever was offered to his person, during his interview with the emperor, they would instantly surrender themselves to his sons, and remain in their hands to be treated by them in the same manner as the emperor should treat him<sup>1</sup>.

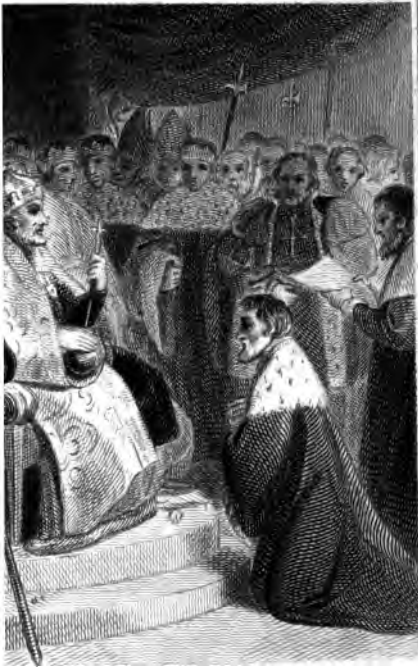
This, together with the indispensable obligation of performing what was contained in the articles of which he had accepted, removed his doubts and scruples, or made it necessary to get over them. He repaired, for that purpose, to the Imperial camp at Hall in Saxony, where a circumstance occurred which revived his suspicions and increased his fears. Just as he was about to enter the chamber of presence, in order to make his public submission to the emperor, a copy of the articles which he had approved of was put

<sup>1</sup> Du Mont Corps Diplom. iv. p. 11. 336.

into his hands, in order that he might ratify them anew. Upon perusing them, he perceived that the Imperial ministers had added two new articles; one importing, that if any dispute should arise concerning the meaning of the former conditions, the emperor should have the right of putting what interpretation upon them he thought most reasonable; the other, that the landgrave was bound to submit implicitly to the decisions of the council of Trent. This unworthy artifice, calculated to surprise him into an approbation of articles, to which he had not the most distant idea of assenting, by proposing them to him at a time when his mind was engrossed and disquieted with the thoughts of that humiliating ceremony which he had to perform, filled the landgrave with indignation, and made him break out into all those violent expressions of rage to which his temper was prone. With some difficulty, the elector of Brandenburg and Maurice prevailed at length on the emperor's ministers to drop the former article as unjust, and to explain the latter in such a manner, that he could agree to it, without openly renouncing the protestant religion.

This obstacle being surmounted, the landgrave was impatient to finish a ceremony which, how mortifying soever, had been declared necessary towards his obtaining pardon. The emperor was seated on a magnificent throne, with all the ensigns of his dignity, surrounded by a numerous train of the princes of the empire, among whom was *Henry of Brunswick*, lately the landgrave's prisoner, and now, by a sudden reverse of fortune, a spectator of his humiliation. The landgra

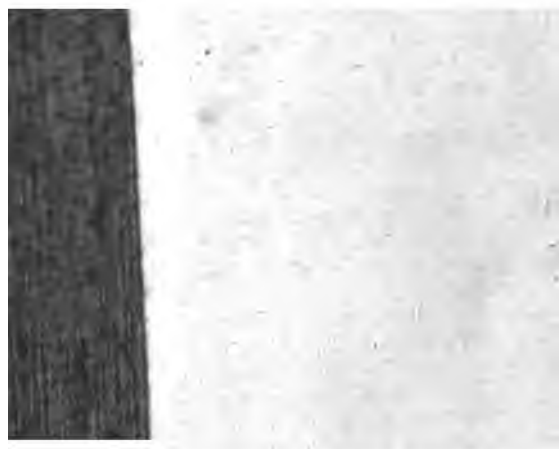
was introduced with great solemnity, and advancing towards the throne, fell upon his knees. His chancellor, who walked behind him, immediately read, by his master's command, a paper which contained an humble confession of the crime whereof he had been guilty; an acknowledgment that he had merited on that account the most severe punishment; an absolute resignation of himself and his dominions to be disposed of at the emperor's pleasure; a submissive petition for pardon, his hopes of which were founded entirely on the emperor's clemency; and it concluded with promises of behaving, for the future, like a subject whose principles of loyalty and obedience would be confirmed, and would even derive new force from the sentiments of gratitude which must hereafter fill and animate his heart. While the chancellor was reading this abject declaration, the eyes of all the spectators were fixed on the unfortunate landgrave; few could behold a prince, so powerful as well as high-spirited, suing for mercy in the posture of a suppliant, without being touched with commiseration, and perceiving serious reflexions arise in their minds upon the instability and emptiness of human grandeur. The emperor viewed the whole transaction with an haughty unfeeling composure; and preserving a profound silence himself, made a sign to one of his secretaries to read his answer; the tenor of which was, That though he might have justly inflicted on him the grievous punishment which his crimes deserved, yet, prompted by his own generosity, moved by the solicitations of several princes in the behalf of the landgrave, *influenced* by his penitential acknowledg  
ment



*W.A. del.*

*Joe. Thomson Sculp.*

*The Sandgrave of Hesse before  
the Emperor, at Hall in Saxony.*



ments, he would not deal with him according to the rigour of justice, and would subject him to no penalty that was not specified in the articles which he had already subscribed. The moment the secretary had finished, Charles turned away abruptly, without deigning to give the unhappy suppliant any sign of compassion or reconciliation. He did not even desire him to rise from his knees; which the landgrave having ventured to do unbidden, advanced towards the emperor with an intention to kiss his hand, flattering himself, that his guilt being now fully expiated, he might presume to take that liberty. But the elector of Brandenburg, perceiving that this familiarity would be offensive to the emperor, interposed, and desired the landgrave to go along with him and Maurice to the duke of Alva's apartments in the castle.

He was received and entertained by that nobleman with the respect and courtesy due to such a guest. But after supper, while he was engaged in play, the duke took the elector and Maurice aside, and communicated to them the emperor's orders, that the landgrave must remain a prisoner in that place under the custody of a Spanish guard. As they had not hitherto entertained the most distant suspicion of the emperor's sincerity or rectitude of intention, their surprise was excessive, and their indignation not inferior to it, on discovering how greatly they had been deceived themselves, and how infamously abused, in having been made the instruments of deceiving and ruining their friend. They had recourse to complaints, to arguments



and to intreaties, in order to save themselves from that disgrace, and to extricate him out of the wretched situation into which he had been betrayed by too great confidence in them. But the duke of Alva remained inflexible, and pleaded the necessity of executing the emperor's commands. By this time it grew late, and the landgrave, who knew nothing of what had passed, nor dreaded the snare in which he was entangled, prepared for departing, when the fatal orders were intimated to him. He was struck dumb at first with astonishment, but after being silent a few moments, he broke out into all the violent expressions which horror, at injustice accompanied with fraud, naturally suggests. He complained, he expostulated, he exclaimed; sometimes inveighing against the emperor's artifices as unworthy of a great and generous prince; sometimes censuring the credulity of his friends in trusting to Charles's insidious promises; sometimes charging them with meanness in stooping to lend their assistance towards the execution of such a perfidious and dishonourable scheme; and in the end he required them to remember their engagements to his children, and instantly to fulfil them. They, after giving way for a little to the torrent of his passion, solemnly asserted their own innocence and upright intention in the whole transaction, and encouraged him to hope, that as soon as they saw the emperor, they would obtain redress of an injury, which affected their own honour, no less than it did his liberty. At the same time, in order to soothe his rage and impatience, Maurice remained with him during

the night, in the apartment where he was confined<sup>m</sup>.

Next morning, the elector and Maurice applied jointly to the emperor, representing the infamy to which they would be exposed throughout Germany, if the landgrave were detained in custody; that they would not have advised, nor would he himself have consented to an interview, if they had suspected that the loss of his liberty was to be the consequence of his submission; that they were bound to procure his release, having plighted their faith to that effect, and engaged their own persons as sureties for his. Charles listened to their earnest remonstrances with the utmost coolness. As he now stood no longer in need of their services, they had the mortification to find that their former obsequiousness was forgotten, and little regard paid to their intercession. He was ignorant, he told them, of their particular or private transactions with the landgrave, nor was his conduct to be regulated by any engagements into which they had thought fit to enter; though he knew well what he himself had promised, which was not that the landgrave should be exempt from all restraint, but that he should not be kept a prisoner during life\*. Having said this with a peremptory

<sup>m</sup> Sleid. 433. Thuan. l. iv. 147. Struv. Corp. Hist. Germ. ii. 1052.

\* According to several historians of great name, the emperor, in his treaty with the landgrave, stipulated that he would not detain him in any prison. But in executing the deed, which was written in the German tongue, the Imperial ministers fraudulently substituted the word *ewiger*, instead of *einiger*, and thus the treaty, in place of a promise that

remptory and decisive tone, he put an end to the conference; and they seeing no probability, at that time, of making any impressiion upon the emperor, who seemed to have taken this resolution deliberately, and to be obstinately bent on adhering to it, were obliged to acquaint the unfortunate prisoner with the ill success of their endeavours in his behalf. The disappointment threw him into a new and more violent transport of rage, so that to prevent his proceeding to some desperate extremity, the elector and Maurice promised that they would not quit the emperor, until, by the frequency and fervour of their intercessions, they had extorted his consent to set him free. They accordingly renewed their solicitations a few days afterwards, but found Charles more haughty and intractable than before, and were warned that if they touched again upon a subject so disagreeable, and with regard to which he had determined to hear nothing farther, he would instantly give orders

should not be detained in *any* prison, contained only an engagement that he should not be detained in *perpetual* imprisonment. But authors, eminent for historical knowledge and critical accuracy, have called in question the truth of this common story. The silence of Sleidan with regard to it, as well as its not being mentioned in the various memoirs which he has published concerning the landgrave's imprisonment, greatly favour this opinion. But as several books which contain the information necessary towards discussing this point with accuracy, are written in the German language, which I do not understand, I cannot pretend to inquire into this matter with the same precision wherewith I have endeavoured to settle some other controverted facts which have occurred in the course of this history. See Struv. Corp. 1092. Mosheim's Eccles. Hist. vol. ii. p. 161, 162. Engl. edition.

to convey the prisoner into Spain. Afraid of hurting the landgrave by an officious or ill-timed zeal to serve him, they not only desisted, but left the court, and, as they did not choose to meet the first sallies of the landgrave's rage upon his learning the cause of their departure, they informed him of it by a letter, wherein they exhorted him to fulfil all that he had promised to the emperor, as the most certain means of procuring a speedy release.

Whatever violent emotions their abandoning his cause in this manner occasioned, the landgrave's impatience to recover liberty made him follow their advice. He paid the sum which had been imposed on him, ordered his fortresses to be razed, and renounced all alliances which could give offence. This prompt compliance with the will of the conqueror produced no effect. He was still guarded with the same vigilant severity; and being carried about, together with the degraded elector of Saxony, wherever the emperor went, their disgrace and his triumph was each day renewed. The fortitude as well as equanimity, with which the elector bore these repeated insults, were not more remarkable than the landgrave's fretfulness and impatience. His active impetuous mind could ill brook restraint; and reflection upon the shameful artifices, by which he had been decoyed into that situation, as well as indignation at the injustice with which he was still detained in it, drove him often to the wildest excesses of passion.

*The people of the different cities, to whom Charles thus wantonly exposed those illustrious prisoners as a public spectacle, were sensible*  
touch



gating to himself all the rights  
exercised them with the utmost  
ordered his troops to seize  
military stores belonging to  
members of the Smalkaldic League  
collected upwards of five hundred  
non, a great number in that  
of them into the Low-Countries  
Italy, and part into Spain, in  
this means the fame of his success  
might serve as monuments of  
a nation hitherto deemed invincible,  
levied, by his sole authority,  
ney, as well upon those who had  
fidelity during the war, as  
been in arms against him ; upon  
their contingent towards a war  
been undertaken as he now

greatly alarmed a people jealous of their privileges, and habituated, during several ages, to consider the Imperial authority as neither extensive nor formidable. This discontent and resentment, how industriously soever they concealed them, became universal; and the more these passions were restrained and kept down for the present, the more likely were they to burst out soon with additional violence.

While Charles gave law to the Germans like a conquered people, Ferdinand treated his subjects in Bohemia with still greater rigour. That kingdom possessed privileges and immunities as extensive as those of any nation in which the feudal institutions were established. The prerogative of their kings was extremely limited, and the crown itself elective. Ferdinand, when raised to the throne, had confirmed their liberties with every solemnity prescribed by their excessive solicitude for the security of a constitution of government to which they were extremely attached. He soon began, however, to be weary of a jurisdiction so much circumscribed, and to despise a sceptre which he could not transmit to his posterity; and notwithstanding all his former engagements, he attempted to overturn the constitution from its foundations; that, instead of an elective kingdom, he might render it hereditary. But the Bohemians were too high spirited tamely to relinquish privileges which they had long enjoyed. At the same time, many of them having embraced the doctrines of the reformers, the seeds of which John Hufs and Jerome of Prague had planted in their country about the beginning of the preceding century, the desire of acquiring religious liberty

liberty mingled itself with their zeal for their civil rights; and these two kindred passions heightening, as usual, each other's force, precipitated them immediately into violent measures. They had not only refused to serve their sovereign against the confederates of Smalkalde, but having entered into a close alliance with the elector of Saxony, they had bound themselves, by a solemn association, to defend their ancient constitution; and to persist, until they should obtain such additional privileges as they thought necessary towards perfecting the present model of their government, or rendering it more permanent. They chose Caspar Phlug, a nobleman of distinction, to be their general; and raised an army of thirty thousand men to enforce their petitions. But either from the weakness of their leader, or from the dissensions in a great unwieldy body, which, having united hastily, was not thoroughly compacted, or from some other unknown cause, the subsequent operations of the Bohemians bore no proportion to the zeal and ardour with which they took their first resolutions. They suffered themselves to be amused so long with negotiations and overtures of different kinds, that before they could enter Saxony, the battle of Muhlberg was fought, the elector deprived of his dignity and territories, the landgrave confined to close custody, and the league of Smalkalde entirely dissipated. The same dread of the emperor's power which had seized the rest of the Germans, reached them. As soon as their sovereign approached with a body of Imperial troops, they instantly dispersed, thinking of nothing but how to atone for their past guilt, and to acquire some  
boy

hope of forgiveness by a prompt submission. But Ferdinand, who entered his dominions full of that implacable resentment which inflames monarchs whose authority has been despised, was not to be mollified by the late repentance and involuntary return of rebellious subjects to their duty. He even heard, unmoved, the intreaties and tears of the citizens of Prague, who appeared before him in the posture of suppliants, and implored for mercy. The sentence which he pronounced against them was rigorous to extremity; he abolished many of their privileges, he abridged others, and new modelled the constitution according to his pleasure. He condemned to death many of those who had been most active in forming the late association against him, and punished still a greater number with confiscation of their goods, or perpetual banishment. He obliged all his subjects, of every condition, to give up their arms to be deposited in forts where he planted garrisons; and after disarming his people, he loaded them with new and exorbitant taxes. Thus, by an ill-conducted and unsuccessful effort to extend their privileges, the Bohemians not only enlarged the sphere of the royal prerogative, when they intended to have circumscribed it, but they almost annihilated those liberties which they aimed at establishing on a broader and more secure foundation<sup>a</sup>.

The emperor, having now humbled, and, as he imagined, subdued the independent and stubborn spirit of the Germans by the terror of arms

<sup>a</sup> *Sleid.* 408. 419. 434. *Thuan.* l. iv. 129. 150. *Struv.* *rp.* ii.



and the rigour of punishment, held a diet at Augsburg, in order to compose finally the controversies with regard to religion, which had so long disturbed the empire. He durst not, however, trust the determination of a matter so interesting to the free suffrage of the Germans, broken as their minds now were to subjection. He entered the city at the head of his Spanish troops, and assigned them quarters there. The rest of his soldiers he cantoned in the adjacent villages; so that the members of the diet, while they carried on their deliberations, were surrounded by the same army which had overcome their countrymen. Immediately after his public entry, Charles gave a proof of the violence with which he intended to proceed. He took possession by force of the cathedral, together with one of the principal churches; and his priests having, by various ceremonies, purified them from the pollution with which they supposed the unhallowed ministrations of the protestants to have defiled them, they re-established with great pomp the rites of the Romish worship °.

The concourse of members to this diet was extraordinary; the importance of the affairs concerning which it was to deliberate, added to the fear of giving offence to the emperor by an absence which lay open to misconstruction, brought together almost all the princes, nobles, and representatives of cities who had a right to sit in that assembly. The emperor, in the speech with which he opened the meeting, called their attention immediately to that point, which seemed

chiefly to merit it. Having mentioned the fatal effects of the religious dissensions which had arisen in Germany, and taken notice of his own unwearied endeavours to procure a general council, which alone could provide a remedy adequate to those evils, he exhorted them to recognise its authority, and to acquiesce in the decisions of an assembly to which they had originally appealed, as having the sole right of judgment in the case.

But the council, to which Charles wished them to refer all their controversies, had, by this time, undergone a violent change. The fear and jealousy, with which the emperor's first successes against the confederates of Smalkalde had inspired the pope, continued to increase. Not satisfied with attempting to retard the progress of the Imperial arms, by the sudden recall of his troops, Paul began to consider the emperor as an enemy, the weight of whose power he must soon feel, and against whom he could not be too hasty in taking precautions. He foresaw that the immediate effect of the emperor's acquiring absolute power in Germany, would be to render him entirely master of all the decisions of the council, if it should continue to meet in Trent. It was dangerous to allow a monarch, so ambitious, to get the command of this formidable engine, which he might employ at pleasure to limit or overturn the papal authority. As the only method of preventing this, he determined to remove the council to some city more immediately under his own jurisdiction<sup>1</sup> and at a greater distance from the terror of the emperor's arms, or the reach of his influence. *An incident fortunately occurred, which gay*

this measure the appearance of being necessary. One or two of the fathers of the council, together with some of their domestics, happening to die suddenly, the physicians, deceived by the symptoms, or suborned by the pope's legates, pronounced the distemper to be infectious and pestilential. Some of the prelates, struck with a panic, retired; others were impatient to be gone; and after a short consultation, the council was translated to Bologna [March 11], a city subject to the pope. All the bishops in the Imperial interest warmly opposed this resolution, as taken without necessity, and founded on false or frivolous prettexts. All the Spanish prelates, and most of the Neapolitan, by the emperor's express command, remained at Trent; the rest, to the number of thirty-four, accompanying the legates to Bologna. Thus a schism commenced in that very assembly, which had been called to heal the divisions of Christendom; the fathers of Bologna inveighed against those who staid at Trent, as contumacious and regardless of the pope's authority; while the other accused them of being so far intimidated by the fears of imaginary danger, as to remove to a place where their consultations could prove of no service towards re-establishing peace and order in Germany P.

The emperor, at the same time, employed all his interest to procure the return of the council to Trent. But Paul, who highly applauded his own sagacity in having taken a step which put it out of Charles's power to acquire the direction of that assembly, paid no regard to a request, the

object of which was so extremely obvious. The summer was consumed in fruitless negotiations with respect to this point, the importunity of the one and obstinacy of the other daily increasing. At last an event happened which widened the breach irreparably, and rendered the pope utterly averse from listening to any proposal that came from the emperor. Charles, as has been already observed, had so violently exasperated Peter Lewis Farnese, the pope's son, by refusing to grant him the investiture of Parma and Placentia, that he had watched ever since that time with all the vigilance of resentment for an opportunity of revenging that injury. He had endeavoured to precipitate the pope into open hostilities against the emperor, and had earnestly solicited the king of France to invade Italy. His hatred and resentment extended to all those whom he knew that the emperor favoured; he did every ill office in his power to Gonzaga, governor of Milan, and had encouraged Fiesco in his attempt upon the life of Andrew Doria, because both Gonzaga and Doria possessed a great degree of the emperor's esteem and confidence. His malevolence and secret intrigues were not unknown to the emperor, who could not be more desirous to take vengeance on him, than Gonzaga and Doria were to be employed as his instruments in inflicting it. Farnese, by the profligacy of his life, and by enormities of every kind, equal to those committed by the worst tyrants who have disgraced human nature, had rendered himself so odious, that it was thought any violence whatever might be lawfully attempted against him. Gonzaga and Doria soon found among

his own subjects, persons who were eager, and even deemed it meritorious, to lend their hands in such a service. As, Farnese, animated with the jealousy which usually possesses petty sovereigns, had employed all the cruelty and fraud, whereby they endeavour to supply their defect of power, in order to humble and extirpate the nobility subject to his government, five noblemen of the greatest distinction in Placentia combined to avenge the injuries which they themselves had suffered, as well as those which he had offered to their order. They formed their plan in conjunction with Gonzaga; but it remains uncertain whether he originally suggested the scheme to them, or only approved of what they proposed, and co-operated in carrying it on. They concerted all the previous steps with such foresight, conducted their intrigues with such secrecy, and displayed such courage in the execution of their design, that it may be ranked among the most audacious deeds of that nature mentioned in history. One body of the conspirators surprised, at mid-day [Sept. 10], the gates of the citadel of Placentia where Farnese resided, overpowered his guards, and murdered him. Another party of them made themselves masters of the town, and called upon their fellow-citizens to take arms, in order to recover their liberty. The multitude ran towards the citadel, from which three great guns, a signal concerted with Gonzaga, had been fired; and before they could guess the cause or the authors of the tumult, they saw the lifeless body of the tyrant hanging by the heels from one of the windows of the citadel. But so universally detestable had

he become, that not one expressed any sentiment of concern at such a sad reverse of fortune, or discovered the least indignation at this ignominious treatment of a sovereign prince. The exaltation at the success of the conspiracy was general, and all applauded the actors in it, as the deliverers of their country. The body was tumbled into the ditch that surrounded the citadel, and exposed to the insults of the rabble; the rest of the citizens returned to their usual occupations, as if nothing extraordinary had happened.

Before next morning, a body of troops arriving from the frontiers of the Milanese, where they had been posted in expectation of the event, took possession of the city in the emperor's name, and reinstated the inhabitants in the possession of their ancient privileges. Parma, which the Imperialists attempted likewise to surprise, was saved by the vigilance and fidelity of the officers whom Farnese had intrusted with the command of the garrison. The death of a son whom, notwithstanding his infamous vices, Paul loved with an excess of parental tenderness, overwhelmed him with the deepest affliction; and the loss of a city of such consequence as Placentia, greatly embittered his sorrow. He accused Gonzaga, in open consistory, of having committed a cruel murder, in order to prepare the way for an unjust usurpation, and immediately demanded of the emperor satisfaction for both; for the former, by the punishment of Gonzaga; for the latter, by the restitution of Placentia to his grandson *Octavia*, its rightful owner. But Charles, who rather than quit a prize of such value, was willing

not only to expose himself to the imputation of being accessory to the crime which had given an opportunity of seizing it, but to bear the infamy of defrauding his own son-in-law of the inheritance which belonged to him, eluded all his solicitations, and determined to keep possession of the city, together with its territories <sup>9</sup>.

This resolution, flowing from an ambition so rapacious, as to be restrained by no consideration either of decency or justice, transported the pope so far beyond his usual moderation and prudence, that he was eager to take arms against the emperor, in order to be avenged on the murderers of his son, and to recover the inheritance wrested from his family. Conscious, however, of his own inability to contend with such an enemy, he warmly solicited the French king and the republic of Venice to join in an offensive league against Charles. But Henry was intent at that time on other objects. His ancient allies the Scots, having been defeated by the English in one of the greatest battles ever fought between these two rival nations, he was about to send a numerous body of veteran troops into that country, as well to preserve it from being conquered, as to gain the acquisition of a new kingdom to the French monarchy, by marrying his son the Dauphin to the young queen of Scotland. An undertaking accompanied with such manifest advantages, the success of which appeared to be so certain, was not to be relinquished for the remote

<sup>9</sup> F. Paul, 237. Pailavic. 41, 42. Thuan. iv. 136. Mem. de Ribier, 59. 67. Natalis Comitit Histor. lib. iii.

prospect of benefit from an alliance depending upon the precarious life of a pope of fourscore, who had nothing at heart but the gratification of his own private resentment. Instead, therefore, of rushing headlong into the alliance proposed, Henry amused the pope with such general professions and promises, as might keep him from any thoughts of endeavouring to accommodate his differences with the emperor, but at the same time he avoided any such engagement as might occasion an immediate rupture with Charles, or precipitate him into a war for which he was not prepared. The Venetians, though much alarmed at seeing Placentia in the hands of the Imperialists, imitated the wary conduct of the French king, as it nearly resembled the spirit which usually regulated their own conduct<sup>r</sup>.

But, though the pope found that it was not in his power to kindle immediately the flames of war, he did not forget the injuries which he was obliged for the present to endure; resentment settled deeper in his mind, and became more rancorous in proportion as he felt the difficulty of gratifying it. It was while these sentiments of enmity were in full force, and the desire of vengeance at its height, that the diet of Augs- burg, by the emperor's command, petitioned the pope, in the name of the whole Germanic body, to enjoin the prelates who had retired to Bologna to return again to Trent, and to renew their deliberations in that place. Charles had been at great pains in bringing the members to join in



this request. Having observed a considerable variety of sentiments among the protestants with respect to the submission which he had required to the decrees of the council, some of them being altogether intractable, while others were ready to acknowledge its right of jurisdiction upon certain conditions, he employed all his address in order to gain or to divide them. He threatened and overawed the elector Palatine, a weak prince, and afraid that the emperor might inflict on him the punishment to which he had made himself liable by the assistance that he had given to the confederates of Smalkalde. The hope of procuring liberty for the landgrave, together with the formal confirmation of his own electoral dignity, overcame Maurice's scruples, or prevented him from opposing what he knew would be agreeable to the emperor. The elector of Brandenburg, less influenced by religious zeal than any prince of that age, was easily induced to imitate their example, in assenting to all that the emperor required. The deputies of the cities remained still to be brought over. They were more tenacious of their principles, and though every thing that could operate either on their hopes or fears was tried, the utmost that they would promise was, to acknowledge the jurisdiction of the council, if effectual provision were made for securing to the divines of all parties free access to that assembly, with entire liberty of debate; and if all points in controversy were decided according to scripture and the usage of the primitive church. But when the memorial containing this declaration was presented to the emperor, he ventured to put in practice a very

✱ EXTRA

ordinary artifice. Without reading the  
or taking any notice of the conditions on  
they had insisted, he seemed to take it  
ranted that they had complied with his  
id, and gave thanks to the deputies for  
full and unreserved submission to the decrees  
: council [Oct. 9]. The deputies, though  
shed at what they had heard, did not at-  
to set him right, both parties being better  
d that the matter should remain under this  
of ambiguity, than to push for an explan-  
which must have occasioned a dispute, and  
l have led, perhaps, to a rupture<sup>6</sup>.

ving obtained this seeming submission from  
members of the diet to the authority of the  
il, Charles employed that as an argument  
force their petition for its return to Trent.  
the pope, from the satisfaction which he  
mortifying the emperor, as well as from  
vn aversion to what was demanded, resolv-  
without hesitation, that his petition should  
be granted; though, in order to avoid the  
tation of being influenced wholly by resent-  
, he had the address to throw it upon the  
s at Bologna, to put a direct negative upon  
quest. With this view he referred to their  
leration the petition of the diet [Dec. 20],  
hey, ready to confirm by their assent what  
the legates were pleased to dictate, declared  
the council could not, consistently with its  
ty, return to Trent, unless the prelates who,  
maining there, had discovered a schismatic  
, would first repair to Bologna, and join

. Paul, 259. Sleid. 440. Thuan. tom. i. 255-  
. III. M X

their brethren; and that, even after their junction, the council could not renew its consultations with any prospect of benefit to the church, if the Germans did not prove their intention of obeying its future decrees to be sincere, by yielding immediate obedience to those which it had already passed <sup>t</sup>.

This answer was communicated to the emperor by the pope, who at the same time exhorted him to comply with demands which appeared to be so reasonable. But Charles was better acquainted with the duplicity of the pope's character than to be deceived by such a gross artifice; he knew that the prelates of Bologna durst utter no sentiment but what Paul inspired; and, therefore, overlooking them as mere tools in the hand of another, he considered their reply as a full discovery of the pope's intentions. As he could no longer hope to acquire such an ascendant in the council as to render it subservient to his own plan, he saw it to be necessary that Paul should not have it in his power to turn against him the authority of so venerable an assembly. In order to prevent this, he sent two Spanish lawyers to Bologna [Jan. 16, 1548], who, in the presence of the legates, protested, That the translation of the council to that place had been unnecessary, and founded on false or frivolous pretexts; that while it continued to meet there, it ought to be deemed an unlawful and schismatical conventicle; that all its decisions ought of course to be held as null and invalid; and that since the pope, together with the corrupt ecclesiastics who de-

<sup>t</sup> F. Paul, 250. Pallav. ii. 49.

ended on him, had abandoned the care of the church, the emperor, as its protector, would employ all the power which God had committed to him, in order to preserve it from those calamities with which it was threatened. A few days after [Jan. 23], the Imperial ambassador at Rome demanded an audience of the pope, and in presence of all the cardinals, as well as foreign ministers, protested against the proceedings of the prelates at Bologna, in terms equally harsh and disrespectful<sup>u</sup>.

It was not long before Charles proceeded to carry these threats, which greatly alarmed both the pope and council at Bologna, into execution. He let the diet know the ill success of his endeavours to procure a favourable answer to their petition, and that the pope, equally regardless of their entreaties, and of his services to the church, had refused to gratify them by allowing the council to meet again at Trent; that, though all hope of holding this assembly in a place, where they might look for freedom of debate and judgment, was not to be given up, the prospect of it was, at present, distant and uncertain; that, in the mean time, Germany was torn in pieces by religious dissensions, the purity of the faith corrupted, and the minds of the people disquieted with a multiplicity of new opinions and controversies formerly unknown among Christians; that, moved by the duty which he owed to them as their sovereign, and to the church as its protector, he had employed some divines of known

<sup>u</sup> *F. Paul*, 264. *Pallav.* 51. *Sleid.* 446. *Goldst. Constit. Imperial.* i. 561.

abilities and learning, to prepare a system of doctrine, to which all should conform, until a council, such as they wished for, could be convoked. This system was compiled by Pflug, Helding, and Agricola, of whom the two former were dignitaries in the Romish church, but remarkable for their pacific and healing spirit; the last was a protestant divine, suspected, not without reason, of having been gained by bribes and promises, to betray or mislead his party on this occasion. The articles presented to the diet of Ratisbon in the year one thousand five hundred and forty-one, in order to reconcile the contending parties, served as a model for the present work. But as the emperor's situation was much changed since that time, and he found it no longer necessary to manage the protestants with the same delicacy as at that juncture, the concessions in their favour were not now so numerous, nor did they extend to points of so much consequence. The treatise contained a complete system of theology, conformable in almost every article to the tenets of the Romish church, though expressed, for the most part, in the softest words, or in scriptural phrases, or in terms of studied ambiguity. Every doctrine, however, peculiar to popery, was retained, and the observation of all the rites, which the protestants condemned as inventions of men introduced into the worship of God, was enjoined. With regard to two points only, some relaxation in the rigour of opinion as well as some latitude in practice were admitted. Such ecclesiastics as had married, and would not put away their wives, were allowed, nevertheless, to perform all the functions

of their sacred office ; and those provinces which had been accustomed to partake of the cup, as well as of the bread in the sacrament of the Lord's supper, were still indulged in the privilege of receiving both. Even these were declared to be concessions for the sake of peace, and granted only for a season, in compliance with the weakness or prejudices of their countrymen \*.

This system of doctrine, known afterwards by the name of the *Interim*, because it contained temporary regulations, which were to continue no longer in force than until a free general council could be held, the emperor presented to the diet [May 15], with a pompous declaration of his sincere intention to re-establish tranquillity and order in the church, as well as of his hopes that their adopting these regulations would contribute greatly to bring about that desirable event. It was read in presence of the diet, according to form. As soon as it was finished, the archbishop of Mentz, president of the electoral college, rose up hastily, and, having thanked the emperor for his unwearied and pious endeavours in order to restore peace to the church, he, in name of the diet, signified their approbation of the system of doctrine which had been read, together with their resolution of conforming to it in every particular. The whole assembly was amazed at a declaration so unprecedented and unconstitutional, as well as at the elector's presumption in pretending to deliver the sense of the diet, upon a point which had not hitherto

\* F. Paul, 270. Pallav. ii. 60. Sleid. 453. 457. Struv. Corp. 1054. Goldast. Constit. Imper. i. 513.



of the interim, and prepared to enforce  
servance of it, as a decree of the empi

During this diet, the wife and child  
landgrave, warmly seconded by Mauri  
ony, endeavoured to interest the m  
behalf of that unhappy prince, who stil  
ed in confinement. But Charles, wh  
choose to be brought under the neces  
jecting any request that came from f  
spectable body, in order to prevent th  
sentations, laid before the diet an acco  
transactions with the landgrave, toge  
the motives which had at first induce  
detain that prince in custody, and v  
clered it prudent, as he alleged, to kee  
under restraint. It was no easy matt  
any good reason for an action, incapabl  
justified. But he thought the most

In order to counterbalance the unfavourable impression which this inflexible rigour might make, Charles, as a proof that his gratitude was no less permanent and unchangeable than his resentment, invested Maurice in the electoral dignity, with all the legal formalities. The ceremony was performed, with extraordinary pomp, in an open court, so near the apartment in which the degraded elector was kept a prisoner, that he could view it from his windows. Even this insult did not ruffle his usual tranquillity; and turning his eyes that way, he beheld a prosperous rival receiving those ensigns of dignity of which he had been stripped, without uttering one sentiment unbecoming the fortitude that he had preserved amidst all his calamities<sup>a</sup>.

Immediately after the dissolution of the diet, the emperor ordered the Interim to be published in the German as well as Latin language. It met with the usual reception of conciliating schemes, when proposed to men heated with disputation; both parties declaimed against it with equal violence. The protestants condemned it as a system containing the grossest errors of popery, disguised with so little art, that it could impose only on the most ignorant, or on those who, by wilfully shutting their eyes, favoured the deception. The papists inveighed against it, as a work in which some doctrines of the church were impiously given up, others meanly concealed, and all of them delivered in terms calcu-

<sup>a</sup> Thuan. Hist. lib. v. 176. Struv. Corp. 1054. Investitura Mauricii, a Mammerano Lucemburgo descripta, ap. Scardium, ii. 508.



lated rather to deceive the unwary, than to instruct the ignorant, or to reclaim such as were enemies to the truth. While the Lutheran divines fiercely attacked it on one hand, the general of the Dominicans with no less vehemence impugned it on the other. But at Rome, as soon as the contents of the Interim came to be known, the indignation of the courtiers and ecclesiastics rose to the greatest height. They exclaimed against the emperor's profane encroachment on the sacerdotal function, in presuming, with the concurrence of an assembly of laymen, to define articles of faith, and to regulate modes of worship. They compared this rash deed to that of Uzziah, who, with an unhallowed hand, had touched the ark of God; or to the bold attempts of those emperors, who had rendered their memory detestable, by endeavouring to model the Christian church according to their pleasure. They even affected to find out a resemblance between the emperor's conduct and that of Henry VIII. and expressed their fear of his imitating the example of that apostate, by usurping the title as well as jurisdiction belonging to the head of the church. All, therefore, contended with one voice, that as the foundations of ecclesiastical authority were now shaken, and the whole fabric ready to be overturned by a new enemy, some powerful method of defence must be provided, and a vigorous resistance must be made, in the beginning, before he grew too formidable to be opposed.

The pope, whose judgment was improved by longer experience in great transactions, as well as by a more extensive observation of human affairs

affairs, viewed the matter with more acute discernment, and derived comfort from the very circumstance which filled them with apprehension. He was astonished that a prince of such superior sagacity as the emperor, should be so intoxicated with a single victory, as to imagine that he might give law to mankind, and decide even in those matters, with regard to which they are most impatient of dominion. He saw that by joining any one of the contending parties in Germany, Charles might have had it in his power to have oppressed the other, but that the presumption of success had now inspired him with the vain thought of his being able to domineer over both. He foretold that a system which all attacked, and none defended, could not be of long duration; and that, for this reason, there was no need of his interposing in order to hasten its fall; for as soon as the powerful hand which now upheld it was withdrawn, it would sink of its own accord, and be forgotten for ever <sup>b</sup>.

The emperor, fond of his own plan, adhered to his resolution of carrying it into full execution. But though the elector Palatine, the elector of Brandenburg, and Maurice, influenced by the same considerations as formerly, seemed ready to yield implicit obedience to whatever he should enjoin, he met not every where with a like obsequious submission. John marquis of Brandenburg Anspach, although he had taken part with great zeal in the war against the confederates of Smalkalde, refused to renounce

<sup>b</sup> *Sleid.* 468. *F. Faul*, 271. 277. *Pallav.* ii. 64.  
doctr



to plead the same indulgence. on other trying occasions, the elector of Saxony was most dmerited the highest praise. Ching the authority of his exam protestant party, laboured, v earnestness, to gain his approb terim, and by employing somet setting him at liberty, somet treating him with greater harf alternately to work upon his ho But he was alike regardless of having declared his fixed belief of the reformation, " I cannot in my old age, abandon the pri I early contended ; nor, in o freedom during a few declining tray that good cause, on accoun

drew upon him fresh marks of his displeasure: The rigour of his confinement was increased; the number of his servants abridged; the Lutheran clergymen, who had hitherto been permitted to attend him, were dismissed; and even the books of devotion, which had been his chief consolation during a tedious imprisonment, were taken from him<sup>c</sup>. The landgrave of Hesse, his companion in misfortune, did not maintain the same constancy. His patience and fortitude were both so much exhausted by the length of his confinement, that, willing to purchase freedom at any price, he wrote to the emperor, offering not only to approve of the Interim, but to yield an unreserved submission to his will in every other particular. But Charles, who knew that whatever course the landgrave might hold, neither his example nor authority would prevail on his children or subjects to receive the Interim, paid no regard to his offers. He was kept confined as strictly as *Jeffer*; and while he suffered the cruel mortification of having his conduct set in contrast to that of the elector, he derived not the smallest benefit from the mean step which exposed him to much deserved censure<sup>d</sup>.

But it was in the Imperial cities that Charles met with the most violent opposition to the Interim. These small commonwealths, the citizens of which were accustomed to liberty and independence, had embraced the doctrines of the reformation when they were first published, with remarkable eagerness; the bold spirit of innovation being peculiarly suited to the genius of free


<sup>c</sup> *Sleid.* 462.

<sup>d</sup> *Ibid.*

government. Among them, the protestant teachers had made the greatest number of proselytes. The most eminent divines of the party were settled in them as pastors. By having the direction of the schools and other seminaries of learning, they had trained up disciples, who were as well instructed in the articles of their faith, as they were zealous to defend them. Such persons were not to be guided by example, or swayed by authority; but having been taught to employ their own understanding in examining and deciding with respect to the points in controversy, they thought that they were both qualified and entitled to judge for themselves. As soon as the contents of the Interim were known, they, with one voice, joined in refusing to admit it. Augsburg, Ulm, Strasburg, Constance, Bremen, Magdeburg, together with many other towns of less note, presented remonstrances to the emperor, setting forth the irregular and unconstitutional manner in which the Interim had been enacted, and beseeching him not to offer such violence to their consciences, as to require their assent to a form of doctrine and worship, which appeared to them repugnant to the express precepts of the divine law. But Charles having prevailed on so many princes of the empire to approve of his new model, was not much moved by the representations of those cities, which, how formidable soever they might have proved, if they could have been formed into one body, lay so remote from each other, that it was easy to oppress them separately, before it was possible for them to unite.

In order to accomplish this, the emperor saw it to be requisite that his measures should be vigorous, and executed with such rapidity as to allow no time for concerting any common plan of opposition. Having laid down this maxim as the rule of his proceedings, his first attempt was upon the city of Augsburg, which, though overawed by the presence of the Spanish troops, he knew to be as much dissatisfied with the Interim as any in the empire. He ordered one body of these troops to seize the gates; he posted the rest in different quarters of the city; and assembling all the burgeses in the town-hall [Aug. 3], he, by his sole absolute authority, published a decree abolishing their present form of government, dissolving all their corporations and fraternities, and nominating a small number of persons, in whom he vested for the future all the powers of government. Each of the persons, thus chosen, took an oath to observe the Interim. An act of power so unprecedented as well as arbitrary, which excluded the body of the inhabitants from any share in the government of their own community, and subjected them to men who had no other merit than their servile devotion to the emperor's will, gave general disgust; but as they durst not venture upon resistance, they were obliged to submit in silence. From Augsburg, in which he left a garrison, he proceeded to Ulm, and new-modelling its government with the same violent hand, he seized such of their pastors as refused to subscribe the Interim, committed them to prison, and at his departure

carried them along with him in chains<sup>f</sup>. By this severity he not only secured the reception of the Interim in two of the most powerful cities, but gave warning to the rest what such as continued refractory had to expect. The effect of the example was as great as he could have wished; and many towns, in order to save themselves from the like treatment, found it necessary to comply with what he enjoined. This obedience, extorted by the rigour of authority, produced no change in the sentiments of the Germans, and extended no farther than to make them conform so far to what he required, as was barely sufficient to screen them from punishment. The protestant preachers accompanied those religious rites, the observation of which the Interim prescribed, with such an explication of their tendency, as served rather to confirm than to remove the scruples of their hearers with regard



inclination revolted against the doctrines and ceremonies imposed on them; and though, for the present, they concealed their disgust and resentment, it was evident that these passions could not always be kept under restraint, but would break out at last in effects proportional to their violence &c.

Charles, however, highly pleased with having bent the stubborn spirit of the Germans to such general submission, departed for the Low-Countries, fully determined to compel the cities, which still stood out, to receive the Interim. He carried his two prisoners, the elector of Saxony and landgrave of Hesse, along with him, either because he durst not leave them behind him in Germany, or because he wished to give his countrymen the Flemings this illustrious proof of the success of his arms, and the extent of his power. Before Charles arrived at Brussels [Sept. 17], he was informed that the pope's legates at Bologna had dismissed the council by an indefinite prorogation, and that the prelates assembled there had returned to their respective countries. Necessity had driven the pope into this measure. By the secession of those who had voted against the translation, together with the departure of others, who grew weary of continuing in a place where they were not suffered to proceed to business, so few and such inconsiderable members remained, that the pompous appellation of a General Council could not, with decency, be bestowed any longer upon them. Paul had no choice but to dissolve an assembly which was become the ob-





recovery it was provided, were acknowledge its virtue, and to its efficacy. Charles did not fail in instruction on the conduct of the papal artful comparison of his own error with Paul's scandalous point so essential, he endeavored to point out so odious to all zealous Catholics. At the same time he commanded the pope to remain at Trent, that they might still appear to have a being, ready, whenever it was thought proper to resume its deliberations for the benefit of the church.

The motive of Charles's journey into the Countries, beside gratifying his curiosity, was of travelling from one part of his


princess Mary his daughter in marriage, embarked for Italy, attended by a numerous retinue of Spanish nobles<sup>1</sup>. The squadron which escorted him, was commanded by Andrew Doria, who, notwithstanding his advanced age, insisted on the honour of performing, in person, the same duty to the son, which he had often discharged towards the father. He landed safely at Genoa [Nov. 25]; from thence he went to Milan, and proceeding through Germany, arrived at the Imperial court in Brussels [April 1, 1549]. The states of Brabant, in the first place, and those of the other provinces in their order, acknowledged his right of succession in common form, and he took the customary oath to preserve all their privileges inviolate<sup>2</sup>. In all the towns of the Low-Countries through which Philip passed, he was received with extraordinary pomp. Nothing that could either express the respect of the people, or contribute to his amusement, was neglected; pageants, tournaments, and public spectacles of every kind, were exhibited with that expensive magnificence which commercial nations are fond of displaying, when, on any occasion, they depart from their usual maxims of frugality. But amidst these scenes of festivity and pleasure, Philip's natural severity of temper was discernible. Youth itself could not render him agreeable, nor his being a candidate for power form him to courtesy. He maintained a haughty reserve in his behaviour, and discovered such manifest partiality towards his Spanish at-

<sup>1</sup> Ochoa, Carolea, 362.

<sup>2</sup> Haræi Annal. Brabant. 662.

tendants, together with such an avowal  
ence to the manners of their country,  
highly disgusted the Flemings, and  
to that antipathy, which afterwards caused  
a revolution fatal to him in that part  
minions<sup>1</sup>.

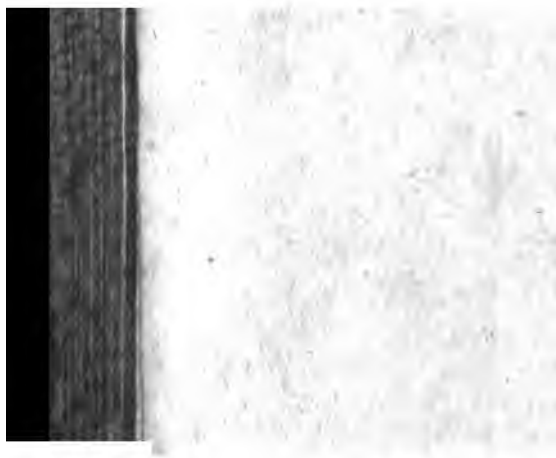
Charles was long detained in the North  
by a violent attack of the gout, which  
upon him so frequently, and with such  
violence, that it had broken, to a great  
the vigour of his constitution. He never  
did not slacken his endeavours to enforce  
terim. The inhabitants of Strasburg,  
long struggle, found it necessary to yield  
ence; those of Constance, who had taken  
in their own defence, were compelled  
to conform to the Interim, but to renounce  
privileges as a free city, to do homage  
and as archduke of Austria, and as he

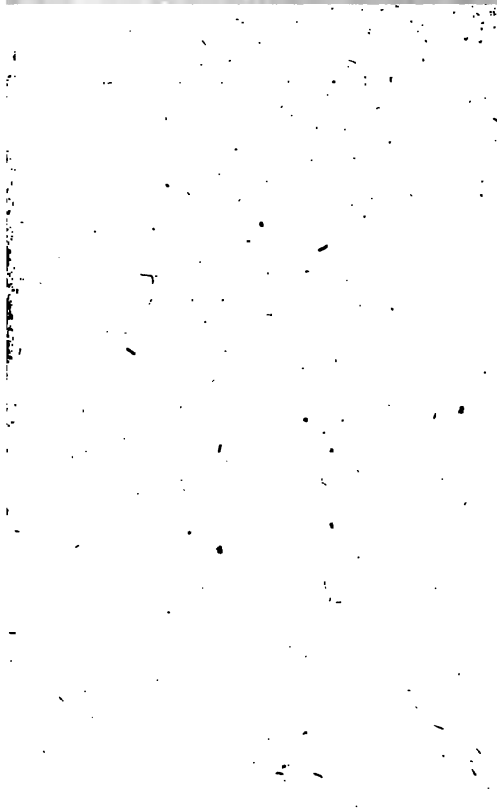




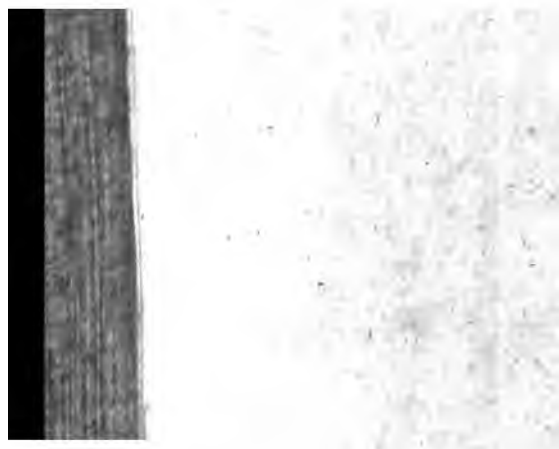














My dear



